REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01729 3769

GENEALOGY
975.4
W52942
1903

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

http://archive.org/details/westvirginiahist03west

Vol. 3. JANUARY, 1903. No. 1.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine

Quarterly.

v.3-5, pt. 1

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year, - - - - - - - - - $1.00.
SINGLE COPIES, - - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

I 705618

THE TRIBUNE COMPANY, PRINTERS,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS OF JANUARY, 1903, NUMBER.

"To the Legislature of West Virginia".
"The Frontier Counties of Virginia".....*W. S. Laidley.*
"The Dunmore War" ...."*E. O. Randall, Sec. His. Soc. of Ohio.* 23
"Records Relating to the Van Meter, DuBois, Shepherd, 45
Hite and Allied Families,"
Samuel Gordon Smyth, Member of Penna. His. Soc.
"Early Settlement of Friends in the Valley of Virginia," 55
Kirk Brown, of Maryland His. Soc.
"Our Scotch-Irish Ancestors" .....*Joseph L. Miller, M. D.*
"Chronological Sketch of Col. David Shepherd, of Wheeling,"
Harriet McIntire Foster, Hon. State Regent, Indiana D. A. R.
"Rev. James Moore Brown, D. D." .....*Rev. W. T. Price.*
"Notes, Queries and Wants."

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

To the Legislature of West Virginia:

GENTLEMEN:

It is our purpose to call your attention seriously and prayerfully to the wants and needs of the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

There were a few gentlemen who felt the need of such an organization, associated themselves together and began the work of a Historical Society, and in the course of time they had collected a number of books of all kinds, specimens of Indian work, and other specimens of historic value, and the State of West Virginia placed in its care and custody its collection of home productions and all together made something of a museum of history. After this Society had gone on for years, it was deemed best that the State should own the entire collection and all the property of the Society was transferred to the State and since then it has been conducted as a State institution, and in a small way has been fostered by the State. While the collection of these things is very proper and interesting, they do not constitute the real work of a Historical Society, and as the history of the early settlers of our country with sketches of their lives and labors and of their families, constitute the principal work of such a society, and the preservation and distribution of this information could only be done by a publicaton, the West Virginia Historical Magazine became a necessity and it has been published, quarterly, in 1901 and 1902. The establishment of a National Historical Society with branches in each State, to be made a department of the government is being considered, while each State now has its own Historical Society and publications.

Some of the States have done a great deal for their Historical Societies and have erected large buildings devoted exclusively to the work of these societies, while others have been doing much, but with less expenditure of money. Our State has perhaps done less than most any of them, while there are but few States that have as much unwritten history as our own, and in each year we are losing by the death of our old citizens, a great deal of information that can never be obtained.

Why not obtain, secure and preserve the history of our forefathers and their families, and their more than human efforts to settle, hold and control this country, that we are so proud to call our own? The history of our own State is not known to our own people, and has never been collected and published to make the same known as it should be, and the people out of our State do not know why it was formed and doubt the expediency of its formation and question its legality, and no doubt but there are members of this Legislature that have never been duly informed on this subject. We have been publishing facts in regard to this and propose to keep up the same. We have published sketches of the lives of members of the Virginia Convention of 1829-30 wherein may be seen that the foundation of this State was then and there laid, and that at each succeeding Convention, the growth of the superstructure increased until when the Convention of 1861 was over, the new State was a natural consequence and a fixed fact.

These things should be taught to the school children and the older citizens informed thereof, that we may give a reasonable and proper reply to the unwarranted assertions as to the birthright of our State.

Our Magazine is not large nor pretentious, nor published as often as it should be, but with the small amount of appropriations, we cannot be expected to do more nor better, yet we are receiving much encouragement from the other Historical Societies. All the work that is done for this magazine except the costs of its publication is done without cost to the State, and the collection of material proper therefor can not be well done without a greater outlay than

has been given to it. The State of Ohio is publishing more West Virginia history than we ourselves, because it is more or less connected with her own history and they are furnished the means to collect and publish information which we are unable to do, for want of means. We are informed that Ohio appropriates about six thousand dollars each year for her Historical Society, which enables them to send persons in the field and collect information, and to publish the same. We imagine however that it is not necessary for us to show what other States are doing, in order to shame you into doing your duty, but rather to appeal to your State and family pride, to show that this kind of work is done by all civilized, educated and cultivated people, and that we claim to be behind none in these qualities and qualifications and particulars, and that this work must and shall be done in West Virginia

"Montani Semper Liberi."

Our Society has been promised the third story of the Annex, which ought to be finished in the near future, and the same should be provided with all the proper and necessary appliances for making an exhibit worthy of the State, and whereby the various collections already on hand may be shown to an advantage.

When visitors come to this part of the State and wish to learn something of our State, they are shown the rooms of the Historical Society, where they can learn of the products of each county in the State. This advertisement might be made to a much greater advantage than it is, and no doubt will be, when we have more room and better appliances.

To meet the actual expenses of all this work, we are asking for a more hearty appropriation, and it is for you to say whether it shall go on, or shall we have to suspend because you feel no State or family pride and no interest in it, and do not appreciate what has been done? It is up to you, gentlemen.

W. S. LAIDLEY.

THE FRONTIER COUNTIES OF WEST VIRGINIA.

BY W. S. LAIDLEY.

We all think in looking back, we can see where grand opportunities have been overlooked, where fortunes might have been made, and how wonders could have been performed, had the foresight been as good as our "hind-sight." And so it now appears, that if England had transferred her entire possessions from the British Islands into the new world, then called "Virginia," and left the said Islands to be held as colonies, with coaling stations, etc., she would long ago have become the greatest nation on earth.

The colonists on the Chesapeake Bay and James River, kept as close to the coast as they could and as the population increased, they extended up the James and the said Bay, always keeping within the influence of the tide, and where ships could be reached.

They formed a General Assembly, which was composed of the Governor and his Council and the Burgesses. The Governor received his Commission from the Crown of England and was supposed to represent the King, or Queen of England, in Virginia. The Council was a board of some six or eight men, who assisted the Governor, a sort of cabinet, called the Council of State. The Burgesses were elected by the people.

In the early days of the colony, this Assembly was both legislative and judicial: it made laws and it adjudicated questions and rendered judgments, civil and criminal. The laws made were always subject however to the king's approval and his veto destroyed them. After a while they established courts, and up till 1634 the Burgesses represented plantations and what were called Hundreds.

In the year 1634 there were formed eight shires, which were to be governed as the shires in England. In Cook's history of Virginia, it is said that they continued to be *shires*, until 1642-3 when they were with others, made into counties. We do not desire to dispute the statement, but we find no use of the term "*shire*", after 1634, but we do find the word county used instead of shire.

No doubt but the said eight shires were frontier counties when formed, and the added ones, as formed, became the frontier ones.

In 1710 there were only twenty five counties, and Stafford on the Potomac, was the extreme frontier county in that direction.

The people on the coast did not for a long time appear to be interested in learning anything concerning the Western part of the country and they confined their investigations to the coast line.

They were more or less controlled by the government in England, and England and France and Spain all became interested in the new world of America, and these countries kept up a continual war among themselves and their wars and treaties and terms of peace, were made, at times, to apply to their claims in America.

It is stated that some hunters prior to 1716 went on some explorations in the Southwest part of the colony, but no official reports are found of their findings. In 1716 Governor Spottswood became curious to learn something of what was beyond the "high mountains" as the Blue Ridge was then called, and he gathered together at Germanna, where he had attempted to organize a German colony for the manufacture of iron, a cavalcade of Friends with guards and guides and made an excursion of a pic-nic character, and went to the river on the west side of said mountains. He reported finding a river running north into Lake Erie, which he named the Euphrates, and some other facts of a like nature. All of which goes to show how much, or how little, was known at that time of the country west of the Blue Ridge.

It was known that the French had holdings in the north and on Lake Erie and that the Indians held the country west of the mountains, and everywhere else, and that both the French and Indians were unfriendly to the English, and there had been no disposition manifested by the people of Virginia to stir up a hornets nest by interfering with their western country.

SPOTTSYLVANIA COUNTY.

This was the first county formed that extended over the mountains and it was formed by the Act of November, 1720, 4 Hen. Stat. 77.

This county adjoined Stafford and extended westward.

The Court House was at first at Germanna, but was afterwards removed to Fredericksburg, which was established in 1727, and made the Court House in 1732.

Why the name was made Spottsylvania, instead of Spottswood, we do not even conjecture, and we suppose that Mr. Penn called his tract of land "Pennsylvania" for the same reason.

Neither do we comprehend why the new county was made to extend into this wilderness across the mountain, in which there were no white settlers, and where the Governor feared to go without quite a company of armed men, but these matters are foreign to our purpose, and we let the Assembly speak for itself. It will be noticed that the Acts in relation to the formation of new counties attempt to give some reason for the enactment, which may be or may not be very good reasons, and it will also appear that the descriptions given of the boundaries are not such as would be called definite and certain, but such as they are, we give to the reader, and let you locate the lines as you may deem best.

"Preamble, That the frontiers toward the high mountains, are "exposed to danger from the Indians and the late settlements of "the French, to the westward of the said mountains.

"Enacted, that Spottsylvania county bounds on Snow Creek "up to the mill, then by a Southwest line to North Anna River, "then up the said river, *as far as convenient*, and then by a line "to run over the high mountains, to the river on the Northwest "side theerof, so as to include the Northern passage through the "said mountains, thence down the said river until it comes against "the head of the Rappahannock, thence by a line to the head of the "Rappahannock river, and down that river to the mouth of "Snow Creek—which tract of land is to be Spottsylvania county, "from May 1, 1721."

ORANGE COUNTY.

The settlement of the valley on the Euphrates river, west of the said mountains, began in the year 1732, which settlement was first made the subject of consideration for the Governor and Council.

in the year 1730 when John and Isaac Van Meter proposed to settle forty families there, within two years, in consideration of the grant to them of forty thousand acres of land, and in some real estate transactions which were afterwards recorded, it appears that a new county to be called Orange was then contemplated, and in August, 1734—4 Hen. 450, the Act was passed, viz:

"Whereas divers inconveniences attend the upper inhabitants of "Spottsylvania, by reason of the great distance from the Court "House and other places usually appointed for public meetings:

"Be it enacted, by the Lieutenant Governor, Council and Bur- "gesses of this present Assembly, that from Jan. 1, next, the coun- "ty of Spottsylvania be divided by the dividing line between the "parish of St. George and St. Mark, and that the parish of St. "George remain the county of Spottsylvania, and all the territory "adjoining to the said line, binding on the South by Hanover, "Northerly by the lands of Lord Fairfax, Westerly, by *the utmost "limits of Virginia*, to be the county of Orange."

The Western boundary of this frontier county of Orange was the *utmost limits of Virginia*, and the boundary of Virginia was "from sea to sea," which would have taken this western line to the Pacific. How far north and south, after passing the lands of Lord Fairfax and Hanover, we do not pretend to say, but suppose it took in all the territory of Virginia beyond these locations. One part of Orange was on the east of the mountains, binding on the parish of St. George, but we are not interested in that boundary, nor do we know who St. George was, if there was a saint by that name, but the western part of said county is interesting to us, and to the people of West Virginia, if to no others.

This county of Orange was made one hundred years after the first shires were made in the colony of Virginia, and the frontier had not moved far west in that long time. We will see about the next century.

In the formation of the next counties, taken from Orange, it is mentioned that settlers are upon the Sherando—this is Governor Spottswood's river Euphrates, which now is called the Shenan-

doah. The Cohongorton is the Potomac above the mouth of the Sherando, and the Opeckon is now spelled Opequon, a branch of the Potomac in Berkeley county. No mention is made of settlers in any other part of the valley, which seems rather strange, as the line of communication from Staunton to Williamsburg, would be more direct and shorter, than from Winchester on the Opequon. Read carefully the preamble to the next Act and see why the Assembly thought best to form other counties on the frontier.

FREDERICK AND AUGUSTA.

By the Act of November 1738, 5. Hen. 78, we read:

"Whereas great numbers of people have settled themselves of "late upon the rivers of Sherando, Cohongornton and Opeckon "and the branches thereof, on the Northwest side of the Blue "Ridge of mountains whereby the strength of this colony, and "its security upon the frontiers, and His Majesty's revenue of "quit rents are like to be much increased and augmented and "for giving encouragement to such as think fit to settle there;

"Be it enacted &c., that all the territory and tract of land at "present deemed to be part of Orange, lying on the Northwest "side of the top of said mountains, exxtending from thence north- "erly, westerly and southerly beyond the said mountains, *to the "utmost limits of Virginia,* be separated from the rest of said coun- "ty and erected into two distinct counties and parishes, to be di- "vided by a line to be run from the head spring of Hedgman river "to the head spring of the river Potowmack and all that part of "the said territory lying to the north of said line beyond the top "of the said Blue ridge shall be one distinct county and parish, "to be called by the name of *Frederick* county and parish, and "that the rest of said territory lying on the other side of the said "line and beyond the top of the said Blue ridge, shall be one dis- "tinct county and parish to be called by the name of the county "of *Augusta* and parish of Augusta. And that the inhabitants of "said counties are exempted from all public levies for ten years."

OF AUGUSTA.

In May, 1742, it was enacted, that the County Court of Orange shall divide the county of Augusta into precincts and appoint proper persons to take the list of tithables therein, and that two shillings yearly shall be paid by every tithable person in said county of Augusta, to James Patton, John Christian and John Buchanan, which money is to be applied in hiring persons to kill wolves, relieving the poor, building bridges and roads, as shall be directed by the *Court Martial of said County,* (that is of Augusta) in September, in each year.

In Sept. 1744, it was enacted, that the County Court of Orange should levy on the tithables of Augusta, two shillings each, to pay the expense of running the line between Frederick and Augusta, the said Frederick county having organized a court in said county and contracted with the surveyor of said county to run the said line.

In Feb., 1752, there was an Act to encourage settlers on the waters of the Mississippi. Be it enacted that all persons being Protestants, who shall hereafter settle and reside on any lands westward of the ridge of mountains that divide the rivers Roanoke James, and Potowmack from the Mississippi, in the counties of Augusta, shall be exempted from payment of all public, county and parish levies, for the term of ten years. In Nov., 1753, it was further enacted that settlers west of the ridge mentioned in said last Act, should be exempted for fifteen years from taxation.

We here find the Assembly in 1752, enacting laws to encourage settlers on the waters of the Mississippi by exempting them from all taxation. We wonder if that was considered much of an inducement by the members of the Grand Assembly? And we also would ask whether there were many of the Virginians from the East side of the Blue Ridge ever crossed the said ridge to settle on account of said inducement or for any other reason, up to the date of this Act?

The settlers on the waters of the Mississippi were Scotch-Irish and Germans from the Valley of Virginia, or Pennsylvania or direct from the old world.

OF FREDERICK.

Not only were the settlers moving west from Augusta Court House, but they had extended west in Frederick across the mountain onto the South Branch of the Potomac.

HAMPSHIRE COUNTY.

In 1753, it was enacted, that all that part of Augusta, which was in the Northern Neck—which was another name for Lord Fairfax land—should be added to Frederick, and that all of Frederick west of the ridge of mountains known by the name of Great North or Cape Capon mountain, and Warm Spring mountain, extending to the Potomac, to be one distinct county and be known as the County of *Hampshire,* and all the other part lying eastward of said ridge of mountains to retain the name of Frederick.

This is both a shire and a county!

BOTETOURT COUNTY.

We find difficulty in locating the line described by which this county is bounded on the north, and of course have no conception of any other boundary, unless it is the line of North Carolina. In 8 Hen. 395, it shows that at the Nov. session 1769 the Assembly said:

"By reason of the great extent of the county, Be it enacted "that from and after the first day of January, next ensuing, the "said county and parish of Augusta shall be divided into two "counties and parishes by a line beginning at the Blue Ridge, "running north fifty-five degrees west to the confluence of Mary's "Creek, or South river, with the North Branch of the James "river, thence up the same to Cores Creek, thence up said creek "to the mountain, thence north fifty-five degrees west *as far as "the courts of the two counties shall extend it,* and all that part "south of said line shall be in the county of Botetourt, and all "the other part shall retain the name of Augusta."

We are unable to locate the creeks and we do not know how far the two courts extended the said line, but we have no doubt but that either of said counties was large enough for all practicable purposes, and we will proceed with the frontier.

BERKELEY COUNTY.

Berkeley county was formed in 1772, and taken from the lower part of Frederick. It was not a frontier county.

FINCASTLE COUNTY.

In 8 Hen. 600, Feb., 1772, we find:

"Whereas it is represented to this General Assembly by the "inhabitants and settlers on the waters of the Holston and New "Rivers, in the county of Botetourt, that they labor under great "inconveniences by reason of the extent of said county and their "remote situation from the court house,

"Be it therefore enacted, that from and after Dec. 1, next the "said county of Botetourt shall be divided into two distinct coun- "ties that is to say, all that part of said county within a line to "run up the east side of New river to the mouth of Culbertson creek, "then a direct line to the Catawba road, where it crosses the dividing "ridge between the North fork of Roanoke and the waters of New "river, then with the top of the ridge to the bend where it turns east- "erly, thence a south course, crossing Little river to the top of the "Blue Ridge mountains, shall be established as one distinct county "and called and known by the name of Fincastle, and all that "other part thereof shall retain the name of Botetourt."

This does not throw much light on the subject of boundaries, as Culbertson creek and Catawba road are unknown quantities. Whether New river and Kanawha are counted as one, we know not, but suppose that is what is intended and that may help, when we find this out. We will proceed with the march and keep to the frontier.

KENTUCKY COUNTY.

In an Act of 1776 in 9 Hen. 257, we read:

"Whereas from the great extent of the county of Fincastle, "many inconveniences attend the more distant inhabitants thereof "on account of their remote situation from the Court House of "said county, and many of the inhabitants have petitioned this "present Assembly for a division of the same.

"*Be it enacted by the Commonwealth of Virginia,* that from and "after the last day of December, next ensuing, the said county of "Fincastle shall be divided into three counties, that is to say, all "that part thereof that lies to the south and westward of a line "beginning on the Ohio, at the mouth of Great Sandy Creek, and "running up the same, and the main or northeast branch thereof, "to the Great Laurel Ridge of Cumberland Mountain, thence "southwesterly along said mountain to the line of North Carolina, "shall be one county and called and known by the name of Kentucky.

WASHINGTON COUNTY.

"And all that part of said Fincastle included in the lines, be- "ginning at the Cumberland mountains, where the line of Kentucky "intersects the North Carolina line, thence east along the said "North Carolina line to the top of the Iron mountains, thence along "the same easterly to the source of the South Fork of the Holstein "river and thence northerly to ridge between Tennessee waters "and Kanawha, to the most easterly source of the Clinch, thence "westwardly along the ridge that divides the waters of Clinch "from Kanawha and Sandy creek and along the same to the be- "ginning, is to be known as the county of Washington."

MONTGOMERY COUNTY.

"and the residue of the said county of Fincastle shall be a distinct county and known as the county of *Montgomery.*

Here we have Kentucky, Washington and Montgomery made out of Fincastle, which was a part of Botetourt which was a part of Augusta, and Fincastle becomes extinct.

COURT HOUSES ON THE FRONTIER.

The Court House of Kentucky was located at Harrodsburg, that of Washington, at Black's Fort, and the Court House of Montgomery county at Fort Chiswell—where are they?

When the Assembly of Virginia had no other names for rivers west of the Blue Ridge, they called them the waters of the Mississippi, but when Kentucky county is made, which extends to the banks of said stream, there is no mention made thereof—why?

What a beautiful little Circuit for a Judge of sedentary habits, a few such counties would make, in which to employ his leisure time, with about three courts a year.

But having reached the Mississippi river with our frontier, let us return to the General Assembly of Virginia and see whether they have been able to keep the run of the lines and boundaries that they have made, or whether the frontier is keeping up with the march of other parts of the country?

DISTRICT OF WEST AUGUSTA.

In 9 Hen. 262, we find the following:

"Oct. 1776—Whereas it is expedient to ascertain the boundary "between the county of Augusta, and the District of West Augusta "Be it therefore enacted by the General Assembly of the Common- "wealth of Virginia that the boundary between the said district "and county shall be as follows, to-wit:

"Beginning on the Allegheny mountains between the heads of "Potowmack, Cheat, and Greenbrier rivers, thence along the ridge "of mountains which divide the waters of Cheat from those of "Greenbrier and that branch of Monongahela called Tygarts Val- "ley, to the Monongahela, thence up said river and the West Fork "thereof to Bingamans Creek on the northwest side of the said "West Fork—thence up the said creek to the head thereof—thence "a direct course to the head of Middle Island Creek, a branch of "the Ohio and thence to the Ohio, including all the waters of said "creek in the aforesaid district of West Augusta, all that country "lying to the northward of the said boundary and to the westward "of Pennsylvania and Maryland, shall be deemed and is hereby "declared to be in the District of West Augusta.

OHIO COUNTY.

"And all that part of the said district in the following lines: "Beginning at the mouth of Cross Creek thence up the same to "the head thereof, thence up the nearest part of the ridge which "divides the waters of Ohio from Monongahela and along said "ridge to the line between the county of Augusta and the district

"and thence with said boundary to the Ohio and then up the same "to the beginning, to be the county of Ohio.

YOHOGANIA.

"And all that part of said district lying to the northward of the "following lines, viz.: Beginning at the mouth of Cross Creek and "up the several Courses to the head thereof, thence southeasterly "to the nearest part of the aforesaid dividing ridge between the "waters of the Monongahela and Ohio, thence along said ridge to "the head of Ten Mile creek, thence east to the road leading up "Cat-fish creek to Red Stone Old Fort. thence along said road to "the Monongahela river, thence crossing the river to the Fort— "thence along Dunlaps old road to Braddock's Road and with same "to the meridian of the head of the Potowmack, to be the county "of Yohogania.

MONONGALIA COUNTY.

"And all that part of said district lying to the northward of the "county of Augusta, to the westward of the meridian of the fount- "ain head of the Potowmack, to the southward of the county of "the Yohogania and eastward of the county of Ohio, shall be the "county of Monongalia."

Who can tell what West Augusta was or where it was?

It was not a county, yet it was represented in the Virginia Assembly; it was called a district, which we suppose meant territory. It had no end and so far as we can learn, had no legal birth or baptism. It seems to have been loose in the woods beyond the Alleghenies and was partly captured in Pennsylvania. As soon as it was ascertained where its eastern boundaries were, they proceeded to cut it up, with counties on the east of the Ohio, but this was not it only extent. Augusta started out extending from the Blue Ridge to the utmost limits of Va., without any limits north or south or west.

When Pennsylvania and Virginia agreed upon their dividing line, it was found that a large part of the county of Yohogania was in Pennsylvania, and not only did Virginia lose the most of this county but she lost the Court House of Monongalia, which was then re-

located at the house of Zacquel Morgans, which now is in Morgantown, and Ohio county was increased by what was left of Yohogania.

West Augusta seems to have lost itself and disappeared much as it appeared, without any good excuse or apology. It just began and just quit, without any legislative authority whatever.

The people in Virginia from Europe, where land was expensive and limited in extent, found themselves flooded with it here and it seems to have been beyond their comprehension, the unlimited extent westward, yet they kept struggling to grasp it all in, and to keep all others out. First it was to keep out the French, then with the help of the French, to keep out the English, and all the while to disregard the claims of the Indians.—"*Old Virginia Never Tire.*"

OF KENTUCKY COUNTY.

This people began early to take things in their own hands and to have their own way.

In May, 1777, the Virginia Assembly met and there were two representatives from this county, demanding seats, and they got them. It seems that the Virginia officials attempted to get a commission to the Sheriff of Kentucky to authorize the said Sheriff to hold an election in Kentucky, but there was no haste made in Virginia about small things like Kentucky elections and when the said Sheriff received his commission the appointed day for said election had passed.

But small matters like Virginia dilatoriness will never destroy an election in Kentucky. The Sheriff advertized throughout his county as best he could and in a few days an election was held, and John Todd and Richard Callaway were elected, and said Sheriff reported that after a fair and open election, a majority of the voters were in favor of Todd and Callaway. The Assembly said it was a very important session for Kentuckians and they would seat Mr. Todd and Callaway this time, but they added to their action this clause, "*but let it be understood that this Act shall not be drawn into precedent.*"

In 1779 Evan Shelby and Ric'd Callaway were authorized to build

a road over the Cumberland mountains into Kentucky, and to have guards to keep off Indians while the road was being built.

In 1780 the Kentuckians seized eight thousand acres of land belonging to British subjects and had the Virginia Assembly to appropriate the same for a school in Kentucky.

In 1780 Kentucky county was made into three counties, Jefferson, Fayette, and Lincoln, with court houses respectively at Louisville, Lexington, and at Harrodsburg.

She was moving too fast for Virginia, the territory was large and fast filling up. Virginia saw the balance of power going west rapidly. Kentucky did not like the style of legislation in Virginia, and when Kentucky wished to become an independent State, there was no disposition to delay her.

In 1789 Kentucky was made a State, and thus brought the frontier of Virginia south of the Ohio to the east side of Big Sandy and extended up the Ohio river to the Pennsylvania line.

GREENBRIER COUNTY.

In October, 1777, Greenbrier was formed from Botetourt and Montgomery. Beginning on ridge between Eastern and Western waters where Augusta and Botetourt line crosses the same (where ever that may be) and running thence in same course N. 55 W. to the Ohio river, then beginning again on said ridge, passing the Sweet Springs, to top of Peters mountain, and along same to Montgomery county line and along same mountain to Kanawha or New river and down same to Ohio. Perhaps some one will tell us how far up this Greenbrier county line ran up the Ohio to join the other line that came to the Ohio?

On the south side of the Kanawha and New river, it was then Montgomery county and on the north side Greenbrier.

ILLINOIS COUNTY.

George Rogers Clarke of Albermarle Co., Virginia, conceived the idea of taking possession of the territory north of the Ohio river, which in 1777 was in possession of the English. Clarke gathered together a small army of about 300 men and with a commission from

the Governor of Virginia, proceeded to Fort Pitt, and thence down the Ohio to the Falls. Where he organized his troops to march to Kaskaskia, and he kept going, and fighting until he had control of the Northwest. We suppose this territory was part of West Augusta, and that the Virginians deemed it their duty to drive off the British, and to protect the citizens, &c.

The Virginia Assembly in October 1778, with a preamble giving an account of the Clarke expedition and the success in reducing the British forts, and making citizens of the inhabitants, and of the duty to protect them, the difficulty of governing the same by the laws of the commonwealth, they enacted, that all the citizens of the commonwealth who had or might thereafter reside on the west side of the Ohio river, should be in the county of Illinois.

Col. John Todd was appointed the county lieutenant, a sort of military governor, and courts were established at Kaskaskia, Cohokia and Vincennes.

In Jan. 1781, the said Assembly ceded to the Federal government, upon certain terms and conditions, all the said territory north of the Ohio which brought the frontier to the Ohio river.

The United States government realized over eighty millions of dollars for this territory.

INDIANA CO.

There was an "Indiana Company" composed of Englishmen, headed by William Trent, who took a deed from the Six nations of Indians, for all the land in Virginia situate West of the Allegheny mountains to the Ohio river, and above the mouth of the Little Kanawha river; this deed was dated Nov. 3, 1768.

What the purpose of this Company was as to its government, we know not; perhaps to form the county of Indiana, in the colony of Virginia; perhaps it was to form an independent colony; perhaps it was neither, but solely to speculate in lands without regard to the government thereof.

In June, 1779, the Virginia Assembly expressed its views on the value of the conveyance, and said it was utterly void and of no effect.

This did not strike the purchasers as good law, nor did they like the Court that made the dicision, and manifested a disposition to treat the decision of the Assembly as void for want of jurisdiction, and in Oct. 1792, the said Assembly repeated its decision, that the deed conveyed no title.

The Company, it seems, brought a suit in the U. S. Supreme Court, and in Dec., 1792, the said Assembly determined to disregard the said suit, and to stand by their guns.

There was no Indiana county or State formed there. Nor did the company secure the land.

OTHER COUNTIES.

During the Revolutionary War, there were no other new counties formed, in this part of the Commonwealth, in fact it was a struggle to maintain those already formed, but as soon as the war was over, other counties were formed from those that had been formed, dividing up large into counties of less extent.

Harrison was formed from Monongalia in 1784.

Hardy from Hampshire in 1785.

Randolph from Harrison in 1786.

Pendleton from Augusta in 1787.

Kanawha from Greenbrier and Montgomery in 1788.

Brooke from Ohio in 1796.

Wood from Harrison in 1798.

Monroe from Greenbrier in 1799.

Jefferson from Berkeley in 1801.

Mason from Kanawha in 1804.

Cabell from Kanawha in 1809.

When Kentucky was made into Jefferson, Fayette and Lincoln, and then made into a State, Virginia lost the counties named for these men, but there are in West Virginia now other counties bearing these names.

THE DUNMORE WAR.

By E. O. RANDALL, Sec. Ohio State Arch. and His. Soc.

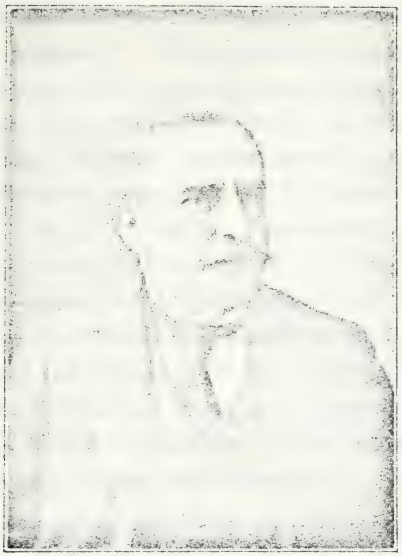
[By the kind permission of Mr. Randall, we are enabled to republish a large part of his pamphlet, that which bears directly upon the battle of Point Pleasant.

Those who would investigate the subject further and search out and read up the authorities cited, will no doubt secure the entire work. Our space does not allow us to republish long articles, but we could not refrain from giving this to our readers.

The pictures of the monument and of the old house, were gratuitously furnished for publication by Mr. E. E. Franklin, of that noted town.

The monument is to "Cornstalk" and it seems strange that this Indian warrior should be given a monument before the white men that he killed should be so remembered. The old house is one of the first built in the town and it stands on the point at the junction of the Kanawha and Ohio rivers, in the park where the soldiers of General Lewis were buried, and where the remains of Ann Bailey now rest, in which public square *the* monument is to be erected. —ED.]

The American colonists had fought the French and Indian war with the expectation that they were to be, in the event of success, the beneficiaries of the result and be permitted to occupy the Ohio Valley as a fertile and valuable addition to their Atlantic coast lodgments. But the war over and France vanquished, the royal greed of Great Britain asserted itself, and the London government most arbitrarily pre-empted the territory between the Alleghenies and the Mississippi as the exclusive and peculiar dominion of the Crown, directly administered upon from the provincial seat of authority at Quebec. The parliamentary power promulgated the arbitrary proclamation (1763) declaring the Ohio Valley and the Great Northwest territory should practically be an Indian reservation, ordering the few straggling settlers to move therefrom, forbidding the colonists to move therein, and even prohibiting trading



E. O. RANDALL. Sec. Ohio State Arch. and His. Soc.

with the Indians, save under licenses and restrictions so excessive as to amount to exclusion.

On June 22, 1774, Parliament passed the detestable Quebec Act which not only affirmed the policy of the Crown adopted in the proclamation of 1763 but added many obnoxious features, by granting certain religious and civil rights to the French catholic Canadians.

This policy of the Crown stultified the patents and charters granted the American colonies in which their proprietary rights extended to the Mississippi, and beyond, embracing the very territory to which they were now denied admittance.

The establishment of England's authority in Canada, with Quebec as the seat of arbitrary and direct rule over the colonies, was a tightening of the fetters that bound the chafing colonies. The Quebec Act was one of the irritants complained of in the Declaration of Independence "for abolishing the free system of English law in a neighboring province, establishing therein an arbitrary government and enlarging its boundaries so as to render it at once

an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these colonies." The French Canadians were favored by the Quebec Act in their legal rights and religious privileges. The untutored savages were its especial foster children. The colonists were flagrantly and unjustly discriminated against. The restless enterprise and obstinate opposition of the frontier settlers led them to encroach and "poach" upon the "preserves" of the Crown. The fearless and independent frontiersman of Pennsylvania and Virginia longed for the unrestrained opportunity to cross the Ohio, and pushing their way into the trackless wilderness, seek homes upon the banks of the Tuscarawas, the Muskingum, the Scioto, the Sandusky and the Miamis. They went first as hunters, then as prospectors, and finally as settlers; "they purchased lands with bullets, and surveyed claims with tomahawks."

Such was the situation until the year 1774 when the smouldering embers burst into a flame, and Dunmore's war was the prelude to the Revolution. The Dunmore war has been promotive of much ingenious speculation and curious guesswork by writers and historians. An air of semi-mystery heightens the intense interest that attaches to this most important and romantic event in western American history. John Murray, Earl of Dunmore, was the royal governor of Virginia colony. He was a descendant in the feminine line from the house of Stuart; the blood of the luxurious, imperious and haughty Charleses ran in his veins. He was a Tory of the Tories. He was an aristocratic, domineering, determined, diplomatic representative of his sovereign, King George, but he was also a tenacious stickler for the prerogatives of the colony over which he presided. He held his allegiance as first due the Crown, but he also was "eager to champion the cause of Virginia as against either the Indians or her sister colonies." He was avaricious, energetic and interested in the frontier land speculations. He had an eye for the main chance, financial and political. He could not have looked complacently upon the Canadian policy of his government. But he was the center of opposing influences. The prescribed limits of the various colonies, while generally distinctly defined near the

Atlantic coast, often became indefinite and conflicting west of the mountains. The grant to Virginia gave her a continuation of territory west across the continent, and according to her claim took in the southern half of Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois. The Quebec Act nullified this claim and incurred the disfavor of Dunmore, who defiantly opposed this injustice to his colony. More than this the Virginians assumed title to all of the extreme western Pennsylvania, especially the forks of the Ohio river and the valley of the Monongahela. This, of course, meant Fort Pitt, which at this time was occupied as a Virginian town, though claimed by the Pennsylvanians at their territory.

Governor Dunmore appointed as his agent or deputy at Fort Pitt one Dr. John Connolly, a man of reputed violent temper and bad character. Connolly was named vice governor and commandant of Pittsburg and its dependencies. Connolly was at best an impetuous and unscrupulous minion of his master. He changed the name of the settlement from Fort Pitt to Fort Dunmore, and proceeded to assume jurisdiction in such an arrogant and merciless manner in behalf of the Virginians, and against the peacable Pennsylvanians, that a war-like collision was narrowly averted.

Connolly's counter plays between the Virginians, the Pennnsylvanians, the Indians and the British authorities are too complex and contradictory to be unraveled here. Whatever Lord Dunmore was, this man Connolly was double-dyed in duplicity. He pitted one colony against the other, the Indians against both, and, so far as he could, doubtless aided the British to urge on the Indians. That the British authorities were, in this whole affair, the abettors of the savages, is sufficiently evidenced by the fact that while the Indians were openly and unitedly fighting the colonies who were still British subjects on the Ohio frontier, they (the Indians) were receiving arms, ammunition and provisions from the English distributing station at Detroit.

The Canadian French Traders who drove a thriving business with the Indians naturally stimulated then to resist the frontiersmen's encroachments. The occupation of the exclusive territory by the

colonists meant the termination of their traffic. The brunt of this contention fell upon the Ohio Indians and the Virginian backwoodsmen. The six nations as such took no part in it. The Pennsylvanians stood aloof. They were not so aggressive as their southern neighbors, and their interest in the Indian was a commercial and peaceful one. The Virginians, therefore, were the only foes the Ohio Indians really dreaded. The Virginians were crack fighters in those frontier days. They were adventurous, courageous, and of hardy stuff. In the mountain dwellers of the Monongahela and Kanawha valleys the red man found a foeman worthy of his prowess. It was they the Indians styled the "long knives," or "big knife," because of the bravery they displayed in the use of their long belt knives, or swords. They were a match for the deadly tomahawk. Another reason why the Virginians were willing and active aggressors in these border difficulties was that the royal authority had promised the Virginiaa troops a bounty in these western lands as reward for their services in the French and Indian war. A section had been allowed them by royal proclamtion on the Ohio and Kanawha rivers. When in the spring of 1774 Colonel Angus McDonald and party proceeded to survey these lands they were driven off by the Indians. Meanwhile, intrusions across the border, depredations, conflagrations and massacres were committed in turn by either side. Much has been written as to which was the earlier or greater aggressor. That discussion is not pertinent to our purpose Many cabins were burned and many lives brutally destroyed. Havoc and horror were prevalent.

Most prominent among the leaders of the whites in this Indian warfare was one Captain Michael Cresap, a Marylander who removed to the Ohio early in 1774, and after establishing himself below the Zane settlement (Wheeling) organized a company of pioneers for protection against the Indians. He was appointed by Connolly, a captain of the militia of the section in which he resided, and was put in command of Fort Fincastle. Cresap was a fearless and persistent Indian fighter, and just the one to lead retaliatory parties across the Ohio into the red men's country. In April, Con-

nolly, only too anxious to spring the explosion, issued an open letter warning the frontiersmen of the impending war and commanding them to prepare to repel the Indian attack. Such a letter from Dunmore's lieutenant amounted to a declaration of war. The backwoodsmen were at once in arms and seeking an opportunity to fight. As soon as Cresap's band received Connolly's letter they proceeded to declare war in regular Indian style, calling a council, planting the war post, etc. What is sometimes known as "Cresap's war" ensued. Several Indians while descending the Ohio in their canoes were killed by Cresap's company. Other Indians were shot within the Ohio border by intruding and exasperated whites. Logan, chief of the Mingos, established a camp near the mouth of Yellow creek, about forty miles above Wheeling. It was first thouht Logan's camp was a hostile demonstration, and the camp should be attacked and destroyed. Cresap and his party proposed and started to do this, but finally thought better and decided Logan's intentions were peaceful,—for he had ever been the friend of the whites,—and the intended attack was abandoned. But Logan's people did not escape. Opposite the mouth of Yellow creek on the Virginia side of the Ohio resided an unscrupulous scoundrel and cut throat, Daniel Greathouse, and fellow frontier thugs. They kept a carousing resort, known as Baker's Bottom, where the Indians were supplied with rum, at Baker's cabin. On the last day of April, a party of Indians from Logan's camp, on the invitation of Greathouse, visited Baker's place and while plied with liquor were set upon and massacred. There were nine, including a brother and a sister of Logan, the latter being the reputed squaw of John Gibson, who were thus foully murdered. Other relatives of Logan had been previously killed. The Baker massacre is one of the most awful blots upon the white man's record. Michael Cresap was not present and had nothing to do with the dastardly deed, and his innocence in the affair is well established, though many authorities still couple his name with the plot, if not the act itself. Logan believed Cresap to be the guilty party, as is evidenced by his using Cresap's name in the famous speech. There were many bloody en-

actments. Vengeance and retaliation were resorted to equally by both sides. The malevolent murder of Bald Eagle, the Delaware chief, of Silver Heels, the Shawnee chief, the malignant massacre of the mother, brother, sister and daughter of the famous Mingo chief Logan, were but incidents among many that aroused the hostility of the Indians to a furious pitch. They thirsted for the war-path. The white borderers were no less anxious for the encounter Lord Dunmore did not wish to repress it. While the solitude of the western forest was broken by the war whoop, and the crack of the white man's deadly rifle, and the midnight sky was lighted with the flaming cabin, and the burning ripened crops, of the citizens of the New England colonies were no less astir with intense excitement. Freedom was beginning to breathe. Meetings were being held to protest against royal tyranny, and committees of correspondence were sending forth their missives laden with the ideas of independence. It was 1774. The Boston Port Bill had been passed by Parliament in March, and denounced in the Boston public meeting in May. That same month the Virginia House of Burgesses, of which George Washington, Patrick Henry and Thomas Jefferson were members, assembled at Williamsburg, the colony capital, and resolved "with a burst of indignation," to set aside the first of June, When the Port Bill should go into operation, "as a day of fasting and prayer to implore the divine interposition for averting the heavy calamity which threatens the civil right of America." The right honorable, the Earl of Dunmore, governor of Virginia, at once dissolved that highly impertinent king-insulting assembly. The Virginians saw the clouds gathering in the east. But the storm in the west was howling at their door. They were prepared to take up arms for their political rights against the mother government, while they hastily made ready to fight for their proprietary rights against their hostile neighbors, the forest savages. The panic among the inhabitants along the river banks, and for a distance inland, had become terrible. The time to strike could not be delayed. Both red men and pale faces were spoiling for the fray.

When Dunmore learned of the failure of the surveying expedi-

tion of Colonel Angus McDonald, he authorized that brave soldier to raise a regiment and proceed into the country of the enemy and punish them. McDonald collected some four hundred militiamen, and crossing the mountains moved down the Ohio to the site of Wheeling, where he built Fort Fincastle, afterwards Fort Henry. In June he descended the Ohio to Captina creek, the scene of one of the late massacres, and there the men debarking from their boats and canoes, made a dashing raid upon the Shawnee villages as far as Wappatomica, an Indian town on the Muskingum, near the present city of Coshocton.

THE OLD HOUSE.

The little army suffered many hardships, and encountered many perils. At times their only sustenance consisted of weeds and one ear of corn a day. Many villages and fields of crops were destroyed. The soldiers returned in a few weeks without serious loss. This forceful invasion of the Indian country was sufficient declara-

tion of war, and produced a general combination of the various Indian tribes northwest of the Ohio.

Meanwhile the Virginians were girding up their loins. Governor Dunmore was awake to the situation. His actions have been both attacked and applauded. He is credited with moving promptly and zealously in defense of his colony, and in defiance of the policy and public promulgation of the sovereign powers concerning the inhabited Indian province. He is charged with using this opportunity, in view of the coming colonial revolt, to bring about a clash between the ferocious Indians and the strength and flower of Virginian soldiery that the onslaught might divert the attention of the colonists from the threatening rebellion against the mother country, and through the inhuman methods of the savage and the ensuing calamities and atrocities cause the Americans to pause in, if not positively desist from, their further procedure towards independence. The proof of his alleged treachery is not conclusive. His movements in this war were at times not above suspicion, and his subsequent proceedings were such as to add grave conjectures concerning his integrity. But Dunmore thus far seems entitled to the benefit of a doubt.

In August the governor began his preparations and the plan for the campaign agreed upon. An army for offensive operations was called for. Dunmore directed this army should consist of volunteers and militiamen, chiefly from the countries west of the Blue Ridge, and be organized into two divisions. The northern division, comprehending the troops collected in Frederick, Dunmore (now Shenandoah), and adjacent counties, was to be commanded by Lord Dunmore in person; the southern division comprising the different companies raised in Botetourt, Augusta and adjoining counties east of the Blue Ridge, was to be led by General Andrew Lewis. The two armies were to number about fifteen hundred each; were to proceed by different routes, unite at the mouth of the Big Kanawha, and from thence cross the Ohio and penetrate the northwest country, defeat the red men and destroy all the Indian towns they could reach.

The volunteers who were to form the army of Lewis began to gather at Camp Union, the Levels of Greenbrier (Lewisburg) before the first of September. It was a motley gathering. They were not the king's regulars, nor trained troops. They were not knights in burnished steel on prancing steeds. They were not cavaliers' sons from luxurious manors. They were not drilled martinets. They were, however, determined, dauntless men, sturdy and weather-beaten, as the mountain sides whence they came. They were undrilled in the arts of military movements, but they were in physique and endurance and power nature's noblemen, reared amid the open freedom and hardihood of rural life. The army as finally made up consisted of four main commands, a body of Augusta troops, under Colonel Charles Lewis, brother of the General; a contingent of Botetourt troops, under Colonel William Fleming; these commands numbered four hundred each; a small independent company under Colonel John Field, of Culpepper; a company from Bedford, under Captain Thomas Buford, and two from the Holstein settlement under Captains Evan Shelby and Harbert. The three latter companies were part of the force to be led by Colonel Christian, who was likewise to join the two main divisions of the army at Point Pleasant as soon as the other companies of his regiment could be assembled.

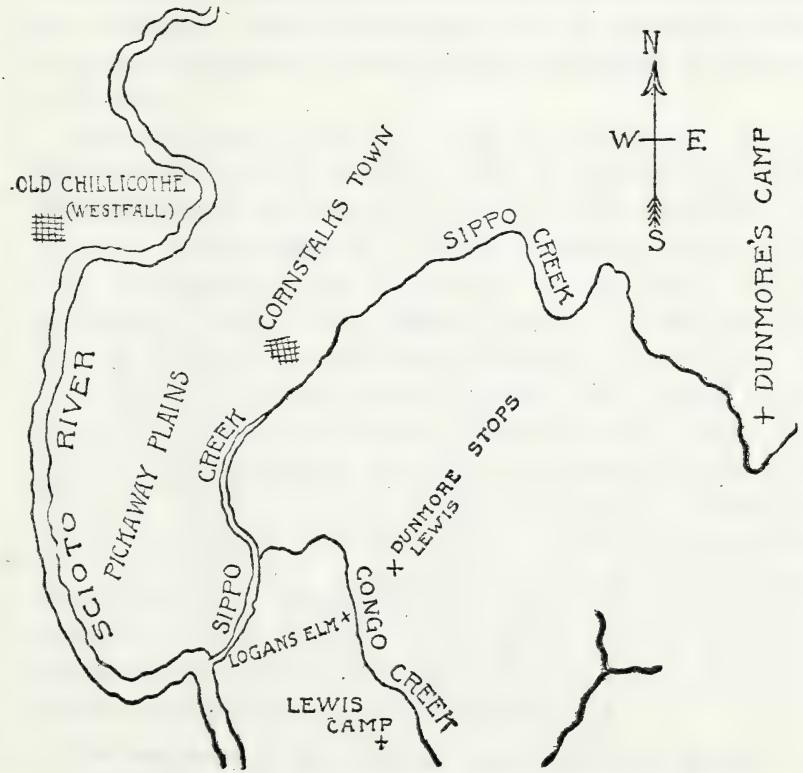
The army started on September 8th in three divisions, the two under Colonel Charles Lewis and General Andrew Lewis, respectively, followed by the rather irregular and independent force under Colonel John Field. Colonel Christian's contingent left later, and portions of them did not reach Point Pleasant in time to engage in the battle, but Captains Shelby and Russell, with parts of their companies, hastened ahead and did valiant service in the engagement. It was a distance of one hundred and sixty miles from Camp Union to their destination at the mouth of the Kanawha. The regiments passed through a trackless forest so rugged and mountainous as to render their progress extremely tedious and laborious. They marched in long files through "the deep and gloomy wood" with scouts or spies thrown out in front and on the flanks, while axmen

went in advance to clear a trail over which they would drive the beef cattle, and the pack-horses, laden with provisions, blankets and ammunition. They struck out straight through the dense wilderness, making their road as they went. On September 21st they reached the Kanawha at the mouth of Elk creek (present site of Charleston). Here they halted and built dug-out canoes for baggage transportation upon the river. A portion of the army proceeded down the Kanawha, while the other section marched along the Indian trail, which followed the base of the hills, instead of the river bank, as it was thus easier to cross the heads of the creeks and ravines. Their long and weary tramp was ended October 6th, when they camped on Point Pleasant, the high triangular point of land jutting out on the north side of the Kanawha river where it empties into the Ohio. General Lewis was disappointed in not finding Governor Dunmore at the appointed place of meeting. Dunmore was far away. While the backwoods general was mustering his "unruly and turbulent host of skilled riflemen" the Earl of Dunmore had led his own levies, some fifteen hundred strong, through the mountains at the Potomac Gap to Fort Pitt. Here he changed his plans and decided not to attempt uniting with Lewis at Point Pleasant. Taking as scouts George Rogers Clark, Michael Cresap, Simon Kenton and Simon Girty, he descended the Ohio river with a flotilla of a hundred canoes, besides keel boats and pirogues, to the mouth of the Hockhocking, where he built and garrisoned a small stockade, naming it Fort Gower. Thence he proceeded up the Hockhocking to the falls, moved overland to the Scioto, finally halting on the north bank of the Sippo creek four miles from its mouth at the Scioto, and about the same distance east of Old Chillicothe, now Westfall, Pickaway county. He entrenched himself in a fortified camp, with breastworks of fallen trees, so constructed as to embrace about twelve acres of ground. In the center of this he built a citadel of entrenchments, in which he and his chief officers resided for special protection. This camp Dunmore named Charlotte, according to most authorities, in honor of the handsome queen of George III., but more likely the gallant governor called the camp Charlotte

after his accomplished wife Charlotte, who was the daughter of the Earl of Galloway. While Governor Dunmore was thus engaged in the heart of the Ohio county Lewis was destined to strike the decisive blow on the banks of the Kanawha. On the ninth of October Simon Girty and probably two other messengers arrived at Lewis's camp bringing the message from Lord Dunmore which bade Lewis join his Lordship at the Indian towns on the Pickaway plains. General Lewis, deeply displeased at this change in the campaign, arranged to break camp that he might set out the next morning in accordance with his superior's orders. He had with him about eleven hundred men. His plans were destined to be rudely forestalled, for Cornstalk, coming rapidly through the forest, had reached the Ohio. The very night that Girty brought Lewis the message from Dunmore the Indian chief ferried his men across the river on rafts, a few miles above the Kanawha, and by dawn was on the point of hurling his whole force of savage braves on the camp of the slumbering Virginians. The great Shawnee chief, Cornstalk, was as wary and able as he was brave. He was chief of the Shawnees, and the head of the Indian tribes of Ohio now united against the whites. The Shawnees were a very extensive and warlike tribe. They were the proudest and the richest of Indian nations. They were the most populous of any of the tribes in Ohio, and they had, in the main, ever been the fierce foe of the whites, first against the French, then with the French against the British, and now goaded on by the late depredations upon their land and homes, and the recent massacre of members of their own and fellow tribes, they were aroused to the greatest warlike ferocity. Cornstalk's army numbered about eleven hundred, practically the same as that of Lewis, and was composed of the flower of the Shawnee, Delaware, Mingo, Wyandot and Cayuga and minor tribes. The great General Cornstalk, sachem of the Shawnee and king of the northern confederacy, though in chief command, was aided by some of the most famous and skilled warriors of his race. Logan, Elenipsico, son of Cornstalk; Red Hawk, the Delaware chief; Scrappathus, a Mingo; Chiyawee, the Wyandot; Red Eagle, Blue Jacket,

X 705618

Packishenoah, the Shawnee chief and father of Tecumseh; his son Cheesekau, elder brother of Tecumseh. In no battle were there ever so many bold and distinguished braves. They were unaided by French or English allies. Cornstalk had the craft of his race and the tact of a Napoleon. He saw his enemy divided. Lewis was at Kanawha; Dunmore on the Pickaway Plains. If Lewis's army could be surprised and overwhelmed, the fate of Lord Dunmore



would be merely a question of days. So Cornstalk "mighty in battle and swift to carry out what he had planned, led his long file of warriors with noiseless speed, through leagues of trackless woodland to the banks of the Ohio." Stealthily and unannounced had Cornstalk arrived on the Virginia side of the Ohio banks below the mouth of Oldtown creek, which, parallel to the Kanawha, pours

into the Ohio some three miles above the Kanawha point. Early on the morning of the tenth, just as the sun was peeping over the Virginia hills, two soldiers (Robertson and Hickman) left the camp and proceeded up the Ohio river in quest of game. When they had progressed about two miles they unexpectedly came in sight of a large number of Indians, just rising from their encampment, and who discovering the two hunters, fired upon them and killed one (Hickman); the other escaped unhurt and fled back to communicate the intelligence "that he had seen a body of the enemy covering four acres of ground as closely as they could stand by the side of each other."

General Andrew Lewis was a well seasoned soldier, alert and self-possessed in every emergency and an Irishman, quick-witted and full of fight. He had been schooled in Indian warfare for twenty years. He was major of a Virginia regiment at Braddock's defeat. He had served with Washington, who held him in the highest esteem. General Lewis "lighting a pipe," it is reported, coolly ordered the troops in battle array in the grey of early dawn. Colonel Charles Lewis with several companies was directed to move toward the right in the direction of Crooked creek. Colonel Fleming, with other companies, was instructed to proceed to the left up the Ohio. Lewis's force met the left of Cornstalk's column about a half mile from the Virginians' camp. Fleming's command found the Indian right flank at a greater distance up the Ohio bank. Cornstalk's line of advance was more than a mile in front stretch, so drawn as to cut diagonally across the river point. By this tactics he had calculated upon pocketing General Lewis on the corner of the bluff between the Ohio and the Kanawha.

The first shock of the onslaught was favorable to the foe. Colonel Charles Lewis made a gallant advance that was met by a furious response. The colonel was mortally wounded at almost the first fire of the enemy. He calmly marched back to the camp and died. His men, many of whom were killed, unable to withstand the superior numbers of the Indians at this point, began to waver and fall back. Colonel Fleming was equally hard pressed

in his encounter. He received two balls through his left arm and one through his breast, urging his men on to victorious action he retired to the camp, the main portion of his line giving way.

General Lewis now began to fortify his position by felling timber and forming a breastwork before his camp. The fight was soon general, and extended the full front of the opposing armies. What a strange and awful scene was presented, one of mingled picturesque beauty and ghastly carnage on that October Monday morning. A host of forest savages, "a thousand painted and plumed warriors, the pick of the young men of the western tribes, the most daring braves between the Ohio and the great lakes" their brown athletic and agile bodies decked in the gay and rich trappings of war; their raven black hair tossed like netted manes in the fray as with glowering eyes and tense muscles they leaped through the brush and stood face to face with the white foe, the latter rigid with firm resolution and unwincing courage, fighters typical of the frontier; a primitive army equal in numbers to their assailants, heroes in homespun, and backwoodsmen in buckskin, clothed in fringed leather hunting shirts and coarse woolen leggings of every color; they wore skin and fur caps, and slung over their shoulders were the straps of the shot-bag and the strings of the powder-horn. Each, like his barbaric antagonist, carried his flint-lock, his tomahawk and his gleaming scalp-knife. For that tragic tableau, quaint and dramatic, nature never made a more magnificent or peaceful setting. The two lines grappled in deadly conflict on the peak of land elevated by precipitate banks high above the Ohio, which swept by in majestic width, joined by the Kanawha that noiselessly crept its way amid a forest and hill-framed valley. The Ohio heights fretted the sky to the west, and the Virginia mountains in the near eastern background were resplendent in the gorgeous drapery of early autumn. It was a landscape upon which nature had lavished her most luxuriant charms. It was a picture for the painter and the poet rather than the cold chronicler of history. No event in American annals surpasses this in the mingling of natural beauty and human violence. The brutal savage and the implacable Anglo-

Saxon were to exchange lives by gory combat in the irrepressible conflict between their races.

It was nearly noon and the action was "extremely hot," says a participant. The Indians, who had pushed within the right line of the Virginians, were gradually forced to give way; the dense underwood, many steep banks and fallen timber favored their gradual retreat. They were stubbornly but slowly yielding their ground, concealing their losses as best they could by throwing their dead in the Ohio, and carrying off their wounded. The incessant rattle of the rifles; the shouts of the Virginians, and the war whoops of the red men made the woods resound with the "blast of war." The groans of the wounded and the moans of the dying added sad cadence to the clash of arms. At intervals, amid the din, Cornstalk's stentorian voice could be heard as in his native tongue he shouted cheer and courage to his faltering men, and bade them "be strong, be strong." But their desperate effort did not avail, though exerted to the utmost. No more bitter or fierce contest in Indian warfare is recorded. The hostile lines though a mile and a quarter in length were so close together, being at no point more than twenty yards apart, that many of the combatants grappled in hand-to-hand fighting, and tomahawked or stabbed each other to death. The battle was a succession of single combats, each man sheltering himself behind a stump or rock, or tree-trunk. The superiority of the backwoodsmen in the use of rifles—they were dead shots, those Virginia mountaineers—was offset by the agility of the Indians in the art of hiding and dodging from harm. After noon the action in a small degree abated. The slow retreat of the Indians gave them an advantageous resting spot from whence it appeared difficult to dislodge them. They sustained an "equal weight of action from wing to wing." Seeing the unremitting obstinacy of the foe, and fearing the final result if they were not beaten before night, General Lewis, late in the afternoon, directed Captains Shelby, Mathews and Stuart with their companies to steal their way under cover of the thick and high growth of weeds and bushes up the bank of the Kanawha and along the edge of Crooked creek until they

should get behind the flank of the enemy, when they were to emerge from their covert, move downward toward the river point, and attack the Indians in the rear. The strategic manœuver thus planned was promptly and adroitly executed and turned the tide in favor of the colonial soldiers. The Indians finding themselves suddenly and unexpectedly encompassed between two armies and believing that the force appearing in the rear was the reinforcement from Colonel Christian's delayed troops, they were discouraged and dismayed, and began to give way. The appearance of troops in the rear of the Indians at once prevented the continuance of Cornstalk's scheme of fighting, namely, that of alternately attacking and retreating, particularly with his center, thus often exposing the advancing front of the Virginians to the mercy of the Indian flanks. The skirmishing continued during the afternoon, the Indians though at bay making a show at bravado, But their strength was spent, and at the close of the day under the veil of darkness they noiselessly and precipitately retreated across the Ohio and started for the Scioto towns.

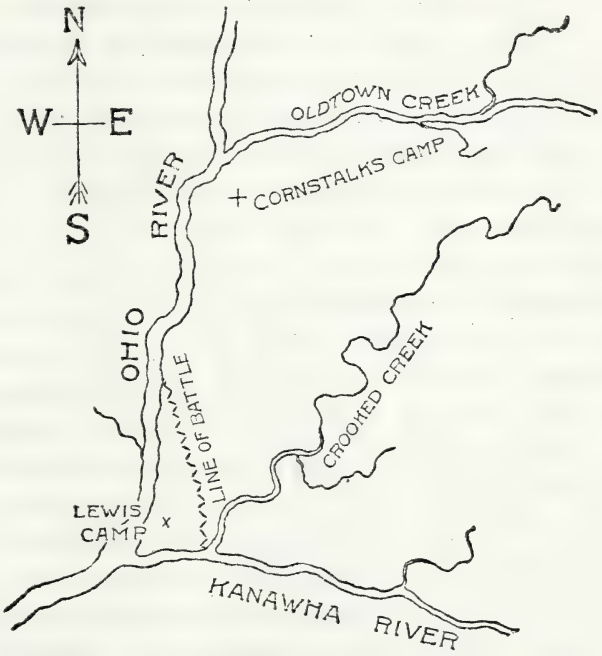
The battle of Point Pleasant was won. "Such a battle with the Indians, it is imagined, was never heard of before," says the writer of a letter printed in the government reports. But the day was dearly bought. The Americans lost a fifth of their number, some seventy-five being killed or fatally wounded, and one hundred and forty-seven severely or slightly wounded. Among the slain were some of the bravest Virginian officers, including Colonels Charles Lewis, Major John Field, Captains Thomas Buford, John Murray, James Ward, Samuel Wilson, Robert McClannahan; and Lieutenants Allen, Goldsby and Dillon. The Indian loss was never definitely known. They cunningly carried off or concealed most of their killed, and secretly cared for their wounded. They lost probably only half as many as the whites. About forty warriors were known to be killed outright, or to have died of their wounds. Of the number of wounded no estimate could be made. While the Virginians lost many officers, strangely enough among the Indians no chief of importance was slain, except Packishenoah, the Shawnee chief, and father of Tecumseh. No "official report" of this

battle was made, or if so, probably not preserved. The battle of Point Pleasant was the most extensive, the most bitterly contested, and fraught with the most significance of any Indian battle in American history. It was purely a frontier encounter. The whites were colonial volunteers. The red men, the choice of their tribes, led by their greatest warriors. The significance of that battle was manyfold and far-reaching. It was the last battle fought by the

CORNSTALK'S MONUMENT.

colonists while subject to British rule. It was the first battle of the Revolution. Whatever the exact understanding may have been between Lord Dunmore and the royal authorities, or between the Indians and the British powers, or whether there was any explicit understanding at all, that battle represented the opening bloodshed between the allies of the British and the colonial dependents. Had Cornstalk been the conqueror of that contest the whole course of American events would doubtless have been otherwise than history

records. The colonists would have been stunned to inaction by the blow of defeat, the fear of an extended and horrible Indian warfare on their western borders would have deterred them from entering upon a revolt against England's power. At any rate the Ohio and Mississippi valleys would most certainly have remained the great westtern province of the royal power, and the United States be but a strip east of the Alleghenies. The victory of Gen-



eral Lewis destroyed the danger in the west, and gave nerve and courage to the Virginians, who were the strength and sinew of the Revolutionary movement. England's fate lay in the balance in the battle of Point Pleasant, though no British soldier participated therein. America has no more historic soil than the ground of the Kanawha and Ohio point—reddened that October day by the blood of savage warriors and frontier woodsmen.

The Virginian victors buried their dead, and left the bodies of the vanquished to the decay of uncovered graves. General Lewis,

leaving his sick and wounded in the camp at the Point, protected by rude breastworks, and with an adequate guard, crossed the Ohio (October 18) and began his march by way of the Salt Licks and Jackson to join Dunmore on the Pickaway Plains. When but a few miles from Dunmore's camp Lewis was met by a messenger from the earl informing him that a treaty of peace was being negotiated with the Indians and ordering him (Lewis) to return immediately to the mouth of the Big Kanawha. Lewis's men were flushed with success, and exasperated at their losses in the late battle and eager for revenge upon the red men, and the opportunity to crush their power and destroy their homes. Lewis shared the feelings of his soldiers and refused to obey the order of Dunmore. He continued to advance until when on the east bank of the Congo near its juncture with the Sippo, he was met by the earl himself and the Indian chief White Eyes. The earl explained the situation to Lewis, complimented his generalship, and the bravery of his men, stating there was no further need of advancement by his (Lewis) division of the army. General Lewis, recrossing the Congo, encamped for the day, and then reluctantly commenced his return march to the Ohio, proceeding by the route he had come, to Point Pleasant. Meanwhile Cornstalk and his crestfallen warriors had reached the Pickaway Plains. The spirit of the Indians had been broken by their defeat; but the stern old chief, their commander, Cornstalk, remained with unshaken heart. He was still prepared to fight to the bitter end. He summoned a council over the situation, and in an eloquent address strove to goad on the braves to another campaign. They listened in sullen silence. Finally, finding himself unable to stir his braves to further battle, he struck his tomahawk into the war post and peremptorily declared, "I will go and make peace." He was as good as his word. With his retinue of fellow chiefs, some eight in number, Cornstalk proceeded to Dunmore's quarters within the entrenchments of Camp Charlotte. Here he made a prolonged and passionate plea for his people, reciting the wrongs inflicted by the whites, and the rights denied the red men. Various parleyings ensued, the net conclusion of which was, the Indians agreed to give up all white prisoners

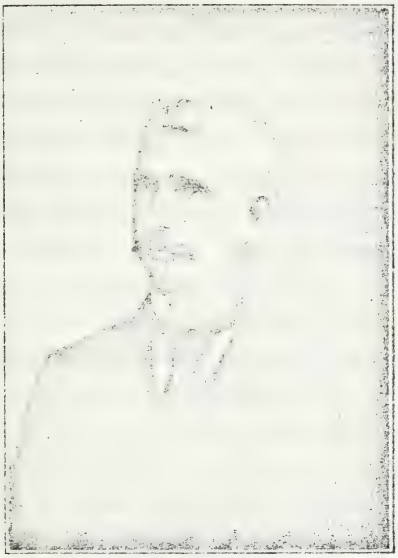
and stolen horses in their possession, cease from further hostilities, and molestation of travelers down the Ohio and "surrender all claim to the lands south of the Ohio."

This agreement whatever its explicit text, was another step in the westward progress of the white invader. Cornstalk haughtily and disdainfully acceded to the terms of the whites. But there was one distinguished chief who was not at that council, and who had refused to be present. It was Logan. He declared that he was a "warrior, not a councillor, and he would not come." Logan was a splendid specimen of his race. He was chief of the Mingo tribe and his father, whom he succeeded, had been chief of the Cayugas. Up to the time of the Dunmore war Logan had been the friend of the white man. He took no part in the French and Indian war, except that of peacemaker. But when in the border troubles between the Indians and whites in the spring of 1774, Logan's relatives were massacred at the Yellow creek, as he supposed, by Cresap and party, Logan's rage became terrible. His character changed into all the revengeful and distorted hate and unrelenting ferocity of which the Indian nature is capable. From that moment for the rest of his life he was the inveterate and implacable foe of the white. He would not attend the peace council with Cornstalk. His influence with the Indians made it important that his concurrence be secured. Lord Dunmore, desiring his presence, sent John Gibson, afterwards general, a frontier veteran and one familiar with the Indian language, to urge the attendance of Logan. Taking Gibson aside, under the shade of a neighboring tree, Logan suddenly addressed him that famous speech which immortalized the chief and furnished a model of oratory for thousands of American school boys. The speech is popularly supposed to have been delivered in Logan's native Indian tongue, and have been literally translated and written down in English by John Gibson, and so delivered to Lord Dunmore, who read it in open council to the Virginian army. However it may have been that speech is one of the great Indian classics. It was a wierd, pathetic strain, and is a poetic recital with a rhetorical charm not unlike the Greek chorus.

"I appeal to any white man to say if ever he entered Logan's cabin hungry and he gave his not meat; if ever he came cold and naked and he clothed him not? During the course of the last long and bloody war, Logan remained idle in his camp, an advocate for peace. Such was my love for the whites that my countrymen pointed as I passed and said, 'Logan is the friend of the white man.' I had even thought to have lived with you, but for the injuries of one man. Colonel Cresap, the last spring, in cold blood and unprovoked, murdered all the relations of Logan, not even sparing my women and children. There runs not a drop of my blood in the veins of any living creature. This called on me for revenge. I have sought it. I have killed many. I have fully glutted my vengeance. For my country I rejoice at the beams of peace; but don't harbor a thought that mine is the joy of fear. Logan never felt fear. He will not turn on his heel to save his life. Who is there to mourn for Logan? Not one."

This speech was a fitting epilogue to the close of the Dunmore war. The campaign had ended. The camp was struck and the soldiers took up their march from Pickaway Plains back to the Ohio. When Dunmore's army arrived at Fort Gower at the mouth of the Hockhocking the soldiers learned for the first time of the action taken by the first Continental Congress, which had assembled at Philadelphia September 5, 1774. The officers of the army thereupon held a meeting and passed resolutions to the effect, after complimenting the success of their general, that they professed allegiance to the king and crown, but added that their devotion would only last while the king deigned to reign over a free people, for their love of liberty for America outweighed all other considerations, and they would exert every power for its defense when called forth by the voice of their countrymen." Strange scene, on the soil of Ohio, on the banks of the "beautiful river," Virginia frontiersmen celebrate their triumph over the western Indians by proclaiming their sympathy with colonial independence. That was six months before the shot was fired at Lexington that was "heard round the world."

RECORDS RELATING TO THE VAN METRE, DUBOIS, SHEPHERD, HITE AND ALLIED FAMILIES.



S. GORDON SMITH.

In the latter part of the 17th century French Huguenot refugees together with a number of Dutch families from the Netherlands, and some palatines from the German provinces, came to America, and arriving at various points in the vicinity of Manhattan, ultimately found their way up the North river to the lowlands south of the Catskill mountains, 80 odd miles above the Bay. Here in the little fertile valleys watered by the Wallkill and the Esopus; comprising in area, not more than 3000 acres, and running a few miles into the interior, these pioneers founded five small settlements, collectively, called the New Paultz region, but made up of the individual villages of Esopus, Marbletown, Hurly, Kingston and New Paltz.

These pilgrims driven from their home beyond the sea by a common religious persecution that was then devastating their native land, found a safe and permanent abiding place on the Hudson.

As a result of the peaceful communal intercourse while in those little Ulster county valleys, they soon forgot social and religious differences; became further united by intermarriage and with its resultant kinship, and harmonious social and business relations; the end of a generation found the two types happily blended, until, at this time by mutual agreement, the Dutch language was spoken only in the domestic circles, while the French tongue served for public use in business, educational and religious intercourse.

Among the French exiles who came were the families of du Bois, Le Fevre, Ferree, Deyou, Vernoy, Hasbroque; some of the Dutch surnames were Jansen, Etten, Bogard, Paaling, Wynkoop, Ten Brock, Gerritsen, Van Meteren, and so on. All these names under the conditions I have named, underwent same change and many came to be written with a radical variation from the original. Take, for instance: Joost Janz Van Meteren (i. e. of Meteren—so-called, from the village of Meteren, a short distance southwest of Buren in the province of Gelderland, in Holland), whose name has been variously written or expressed in these forms: Van Meteren, Van Metre, Van Meter, La Meeter, Lameeter, La Maetre, La Maitre, de la Meter, &c., &c., and that of Dubois, as: D'boy, Debois, Dibois, Deboys, du Bois, Duboy, and so on. This explanation will answer for a host of others of the first settlers whose spelling of the family name today may hardly be identified with the original.

In the church registers of Kingston, to which place it was the custom of parents to take their children for baptism before they were a month old, the names were written by different pastors who officiated from time to time, each of whom spelled and wrote the surnames as he thought proper.

The earliest records relating to the Van Metre family in Ulster county, N. Y., are those taken from the marriage and baptismal registers of the church at Kingston; to-wit:

Abraham La Matre, j. m. of Midwound (Flatbush, L. I.), resid. in Kingston, and Ceeltje Vernoy, j. d., from the Esopus. *m.* 17th. June, 1682.

Joost Jan., j. m. of Meteren, in Gelderland, resid. in Marbletown,

and Sara du Bois, j. d. resid. in the Nieuw Pals (New Paltz), *m.* in the Paltz, 12 Dec. 1682.

Jacobus le Maitre, j. m. b. in Nieuw Haarlem, and Geertje Elsenteen (Elten), j. d. b. in Schenecktede, *m.* 23d Sept. 1688.

It is not unlikely that these three men were kinsmen, altho' the surnames vary and hailing from different localities, they seem to have converged here and settled among their kindred. The baptismal record of their children is as follows:—

Issue of Abraham and Ceeltje (Vernoy) La Matre: Comelis, b. 1683; Susannah, b. 1685; Johannes, b. 1688; Isaac (?), b. 1689; —by Eisje Tappan, 2d wife: Ariantje, b. 1694; Johannes, b. 1697; David, b. 1701; Jacobus, b. 1705; and Abraham, b. 1707.

Issue of Joost Jan and Sara (du Bois) Van Metren: Jan. b. 1683; Rebekka, b. 1686; and Lysbeth, b. 1689.

Issue of Jacobus and Geertje (Elten) La Maitre: Isaac, b. 1694; Martha, b. 1696; Jacobus, b. 1699; Marten, b. 1701; Bata, b. 1703; Hester, b. 1706; and Jannetje, b. 1711.

It is possible that other children may have been born in these families between the baptismal periods recited, if so, their names do not appear upon the register. In the record of the baptism of Joost Jan's children, his name, as one of the parents, is written as: Joost Jans, Joosten J. Van Meteren, and Jooste Jansen; while that of his wife: Sara du Bois—remains unchanged. The name of du Bois appears twice among the sponsors of the children, while none of the name of Van or La Metre occur in any form, as might be expected if the Van Metres and La Metres *et als* were related; but, on the contrary appear other names, which prompt a query,—! could not Joost Janz have been the son of Jan Joosten? I find the custom obtained here, of transposing names, as it did more extensively, perhaps, among the Welsh!

Jan Joosten and his wife Macyken Hendrickse, were sponsors to Joost Jan's first child: Jan, along with Jacob du Bois, the next older brother of Joost Jan's wife Sara. Jan Joosten and his wife were sponsors also, to Joost Adriansen's child; Jannetje, bap. 1672; and again in 1682,—for another child, Sara, the dau. of Joost Ad-

rian. This Jan Joosten was evidently a man of prominence in the religious community, as may be inferred from the fact, that Thomas Cook—in January, and a dau. of Thomas Garton, in February, 1682,—were "Baptised at Jan Joosten's in the presence of the whole Consistory." Joost Adrian may hae been a son of Jan Joosten. His wife's name was Lysbeth Willem—se. Joost Jan's first and third child was named respectively, Jan and Lysbeth, a safe inference is that they may have been named for Jan Joosten and Lysbeth Willemsee.

After the birth of Lysbeth in 1689, Joost Jans' name seems to have dropped from the record; it reappears again along with his wife Sara's at the baptism of Rebecca (Van Meteren) Elten's child Zara, 6th Febr., 1715, when they were sponsors. Rebecca *m.* Cornelis Elten in Sept. 1704, this couple had nine children by the end of the year 1728, and nowhere among the sponsors of any of these children, occurs the name of Joost Jan, except in the instance noted.

There appears to be no mention either, of the marriage of Jan, Jr., or of Lysbeth Van Meteren, upon the Kingston records.

It is possible that this Joost Jans came to be known later as John Van Meter, of Berkeley county, Va., the Indian trader who first trod the Valley of Virginia with the Delaware Indians between 1724-1730; and who, according to various writers, as well as by tradition, was credited with being so well pleased with that country, that upon his return to New York in 1725, "he settled his boys there."

It was in 1714 that John and Isaac Van Metre, Jacob and Sarah du Bois (the sister of Jacob du Bois and probably the wife of John Van Metre,) came to Salem, N. J., from Ulster county, N. Y., and took possession of 1600 acres of land located on Alloway's Creek, which they had purchased of Daniel Coxe of Burlington, N. J., agent of the West Jersey Proprietors. In 1716, John and Isaac Van Meter, and Sara du Bois sold their portion of the above tract (i. e. 1200 acres) to Jacob du Bois, who remaining settled at Pilesgrove. Isaac Van Meter remained also in Salem county, and while here married: circa 1717; Annetje (Ann or Hannah), dau. of

Gerritt and Helena (Folker-Elten) Wynkoop, of Moreland Township, Pa.

John Van Meter and Sara du Bois, after the sale of the above land disappear from our view as far as New Jersey is concerned; they probably returned to New York—temporarily at least, and went out with one of the family groups migrating to other parts.

Isaac and Hannah Van Metre continued to reside in Salem county. They are prominently mentioned in connection with the organization of Pilesgrove church, their names appearing in the covenant roll in 1741, also the names of their elder children Henry and Sarah. Henry the son, *m.* in 1744, his cousin Rebecca du Bois, dau. of Isaac du Bois of Perkiomen, Pa. The dau. Sarah *m.* John Richman; both of whom: Henry and Sarah and their families—removed afterward to Virginia.

Jacob Dubois the grantee of the Van Metre tract in 1716 *m.* circa, 1690, Gerritje Gerrittsen probably at Kingston. She was the sister of Tryntje Gerrittsen, wife of Solomon du Bois—the brothers having married sisters. Solomon was the father of Isaac who settled on his father's lands at Perkiomen and died there in 1729, leaving five daughters. The children of Jacob du Bois of Salem, most of whom were born in New York, were: Magdalena, Barent, Louis, Gerritje, Sarah, Isaac, Gerritt, Catharine, Rebecca, Neeltje and Johannes. Brent *m.* in 1715, his cousin Jacomyntje, dau. of Solomon du Bois, of Kingston; Louis *m.* 1718, Jannetje, Van Vlied, and Gerritt *m.* Margerat ———. When Jacob their father, divided his lands at Pilesgrove, in 1733, into four equal parts, the above sons received each his respective fourth interest, and settled upon their lands. In the church covenant which I have referred to,—of 1741—are found among the signers thereto, these names: Isaac Van Metre, his wife Hannah; their children Henry and Sarah. Barent du Bois, his wife Jacomyntje; their son Garret and his wife Margerat, and *their* son Jacob, Jr. Sometime after this date Isaac and Hannah Van Metre, their children Henry and Sarah and their families emigrated to the South Branch of the Potomac, and no doubt, it was this Isaac, son (?) of John and Sara Van Meter who was associated with his father (?) John in procuring the grant of 40,000

acres of Valley lands from Governor Gooch, some years before. In their respective petitions, John Van Meter states that he is from the "Govt. of New York"; to him was allotted 30,000 acres for 20 families, including his own (of 11 children), relatives and friends. To Isaac, who probably absented himself from New Jersey about this time,—who states that he is from the Province of West Jersey; is allotted 10,000 acres, for 10 German families including his own: provided; that by 1732 the Van Metres will have settled the 30 families upon the granted lands. For some reason which does not yet appear, the Van Meters transferred or assigned their holdings to Jost Hite; and it is evident, that as far as Isaac was concerned—he did not remove his family to Virginia till about 1744, and then settled at Point Pleasant in Hardy county. John Vanmeter with his contingent from New York and Penna. proceeded at once, by way of the old Indian trails through Pennsylvania—to Opequon, Virginia, and settled there under new grants from Jost Hite.

Before dismissing the subject relating to the New Jersey Van Metres, it may be well to say that Kryn Jan Van Meteren, sup. son of Jan Gysbert, could not possibly have been the Indian trader. It seems clear that he was of another family that came from New Utrecht, L. I., to Middletown, N. J., about 1709, and remained in Monmouth county, N. J.

There were also in New Utrecht, in 1698, four families of Jansens, having from one to five children each. They were: Lawrens Jansen, Andries Jansen, Hendrick Jansen and Cryn Jansen. In the same year, Gysbert Jantz, with four children, was living in Flatbush, L. I. Kriyn or Cryn Jansen's son Jan b. 1687 d. y.; his next son John, b. 1688, *m.* 1718, Ida, dau. of Ryk Hendrickse von Suydam and their descendants for the most part, lived and died in Monmouth county. Both John and Ida are buried on the farm upon which they had settled now in Atlantic Township.

As the children of the first settlers of the Paltz grew into maturity and married, and the latter to a considerable extent, among their own kinsfolk, they sought new homes in distant parts. Family groups from Ulster county, N. Y., made their way to the German

communities in Penna. To Germantown, Perkiomen, Bensalem, Pequea and other localities where their compatriots had preceded them. In the settlements named were found younger branches of the du Bois, Wynkoop, Ferre, Neukirk, Hoogland, Paaling, Heydt and other families, mostly related by marriage; but whether or no John Van Meter dwelt among them after leaving New York, does not as yet appear.

One of the most prominent persons connected with the early Virginia colonists of the Valley, was Hans Jost Heydt, (i. e. John Joseph Hite). His name has been subjected to all sorts of contortions. Jost Hite, as I shall call him, was a native of Strasburg in Alsace. It is said that he married Anna Maria du Bois, a dau. of Louis, one of the Patentees of New Paltz, and therefore must have been a brother-in-law of Joost Jan Van Meteren *alias* John Van Metre. The date of his marriage is uncertain, nor is it yet clear what number of children were in his family when living in the Paltz. Two daughters were baptized in Kingston—Elizabeth in 1711 and Magdalena in 1713. For these, Cornelis and Rebecca (Van Meteren) Elting, and Jacob and Madelena Capsesyen were sponsors respectively. These are the only items referring to Jost Hite on the Kingston records. He next appears in Pastorius Colony at Germantown, in 1716, and in the following year, 1st mo. 15, 1717 a record is found where he paid quit rent on 174 acres of land at Schippack, to the Penna. Land office. He is thus located in the Perkiomen region.

On the 17th, Dec., 1718, he bought of Joseph and Mary Kirkbride, and Thomas and Sarah Stevenson of Bensalem, in Bucks county, Pa., two tracts of land, 100 and 500 acres each respectively, for £175; it was also located in Schippack. Francis Daniel Pastorius drew the deed. In 1719 Jost Hite and his wife Anna Maria, conveyed 141 acres of his holdings to Peter Tysen, shoemaker, of Philadelphia. An additional grant of 50, acres adjoining his other land, was made to Jost Hite in 1725, by the Proprietaries Commissioners. Hite disposed of 100 acres of his Perkiomen plantation, in 1728, to Jacob Markley; and one the 10th of May, of the same year "Yost Hyt", name appears with those of Powling,

du Bois, Froman, Fry and others of "Falckner's Swamp, Schippac and Goshenhoppen, in Colebrookdale," in a numerously signed petition to the Prov. Council, praying for protection against the depredations of the Indians in those parts.

Jost Hite while living in Skippack, seems to have been very thrifty. In addition to farming he carried on weaving and milling, having built a mill on Perkiomen creek; the weaving industry he seems to have brought from Germantown, apparently.

In January 1730, Hite sold the 600 acres, including the mill—still, at what is now Schwenksville—to John Paaling (Pawling) for £540. Paaling, three days later conveyed a half interest in the mill and 58 acres of land to Isaac du Bois (previously referred to), son of Solomon du Bois, who had now located in the neighborhood on his father's lands. Isaac, who was a nephew of Jost Hite and Joost Van Meteren, died in 1729. In 1747 his heirs sold the property to Peter Pennypacker, ancestor of the Hon. S. W. Pennypacker, Governor-elect of Pennsylvania, who now owns and makes his summer home upon the property. It was on these lands, too, that General Washington and the American army encamped for several days both before and after the fateful battle of Germantown, in October, 1777. The property was then known as Pennypacker's Mills and was in the possession of Samuel Pennypacker.

While a resident of the Perkiomen country, among those whom Hite had for neighbors, were the families of Froman, Fry, Conrad, Jones and others whose names afterward became familiar in the Valley of Virginia. Paul Froman *m.* Hite's dau. Elizabeth. Robert Jones *m.* Mary, dau. of John Van Metre.

After 1730 we lose sight of Hite in Pennsylvania; but in 1732 his name appears among the Dutch settlers in the Shenandoah valley, where he seems to have bought out the interest of the Van Metres in the 40,000 acre grant and opened it to settlement. At this time Hite was said to have been well advanced in years. He had a large family—at least eight, probably ten, in number. Many of his children were married, and grandchildren born before the "trek" of the Germans led them through Pennsylvania, and Maryland to the banks of the Potowmack.

The names of Jost Hite's children, which I have compiled from various sources were: John, *m.* Zara Elting; Jacob, *m.* a Mary Van Meteren; Isaac *m.* Helita Elting; Abraham *m.* a Rebecca Van Meteren; Elizabeth *m.* Paul Froman; Magdalena, *m.* Jacob Chrisman; Maria, *m.* Geo. Baumann; Susannah *m.* Abraham Weissman, Joseph (?) and Thomas (?). I have the baptismal record of sixteen of the grandchildren of Jost Hite, by the Rev. Johann Caspar Stoever, which occurred at Opequon between the years 1732 and 1739. During the same period Jost Hite and his wife were sponsors not only to these children but for those of his friends: Peter Stephan, Ulrich Buger, Blank and others.

Mr. W. S. Laidley is a lineal descendant of Jost Hite through his eldest son John, and by his only son John's eldest son Jacob, whose eldest dau. Mary Scales Hite *m.* John Laidley, who were the parents of the editor.

There lived at Lebanon, Pa., contemporaneous with Jost Hite, Peter and Abraham Hite and their families. Possibly these may have been relations of Jost. In 1747, the Rev. Stoever baptized several of their children.

With regard to the identity of John Van Metre, the Indian trader, it seems impossible to reconcile the various statements made about him and his family; or to determine positively the relationship, if any, existing between him and Isaac Van Metre of Salem, N. J.; or to set aside the feeling that the Rebecca Van Meteren who *m.* Cornelis Elting was probably the daughter of John. It is possible, if it were true that she was the dau. of John, of Berkeley county, Va., that she may have lost her husband by death and afterward *m.* Solomon Hedges, albeit she had nine children for a second wedding dowry.

In his petition to Governor Gooch for the Virginia lands, John Van Metre informs us that he is of the "Govt. of New York," and has a family of eleven children; of whom, says D. S. Van Metre, in West Va., Magazine, April 1902; there were five there were five sons and six daughters. John Van Metre's will proved at Winchester, Va., in 1745, proves this to be correct, and gives the names

of his children. They were: Abraham, Isaac, Henry and Jacob, sons; Sarah, Mary, Rebecca, Elizabeth, Magdalena and Rachael, daughters. Johannis and Joanna, grandchildren; son and daughter of his *eldest* son Johannes (the German form of Dutch Jan), deceased; both under age Johannes, being deceased, the order in which the names are written may not have been the same as of their birth. Three of these names agree with the baptismal names of Joost Jan Van Meteren's children, at Kingston. Jan. the eldest b. 1683; Rebecca, b. 1686; Lysbeth, b. 1689. Sarah *m.* James Davis, probably the same who was killed by the Indians in 1752; Mary *m.* Robert Jones; Rebecca *m.* Solomon Hedges; Elizabeth *m.* Thomas Shepherd, and Rachael *m.* John (?) Le Farge. (Le Farge).

The late J. B. Kerfott of Martinsburg, Va., supplies the following: Abraham *m.* 1st Ruth Hedges, 2d, Mrs. Wheeler, nee Roberts, Johannas *m.* Rebecca Powelson. He also says, that according to tradition the first wife of John Van Metre was Sara Berdine, of a New York Huguenot family. Evidently the name has been confused and du Bois is probably meant. John Van Meter *m.* 2nd, Margerat ————. The will mentions her name. It also disposes of about 3,400 acres of lands, some of which had been bought of Jost Hite, some acquired of others, and some that lay in Maryland, that was probably bought before he settled in Virginia. He signs his name "John Metor."

There is some reason to assume that John Van Metre after settling his son (?) Isaac, at Salem, N. J., in 1716, resumed his business relations with the Indians of New York, and as they made frequent incursions into the country of their natural enemies the Catawbas and Cherokees in the Carolinas, Van Metre often accompanied them south to the Holston.

At Monocacy, Md., where a number of German and Quaker families from New Jersey and Pennsylvania, had settled about 1725—John Van Meter, and possibly Isaac, too, bought considerable land and here John may have established his family—Jan's in particular—where they would be centrally located on the trail of the trading expeditions between New York and the Carolinas. His sons

Johannas and Isaac both owned land at Monocacy, here Johannes lived and died, perhaps a few years after his marriage as he left only two children. This would account to some extent, for the absence of any mention of Johannas in the accounts and traditions of the Virginia family. Here too, it is possible, that Abraham Van Metre met and married Ruth Hedges; Rebecca, Solomon Hedges, and Elizabeth Thomas Shepherd. Both the Hedges and the Shepherd families were prominent in Maryland before they appeared in Virginia. Even prior to 1725, the Hedges, Shepherds, Zanes and others were among the early Quaker settlers in Salem, N. J., and it is unlikely that the genesis of the families of that name in the valley of Virginia, may be traced to an origin in Fenwick's Colony, Salem county, N. J.

Elizabeth Shepherd received as a part of the legacy from her father John Van Meter, a plantation called "Pelmel," on the Potomac, in Prince George's county, Maryland, a fact which has important bearing upon the subject, since it indicates a possible prior residence in Maryland, before the Van Meters came to Virginia.

—*Samuel Gordon Smyth.*

West Conshohocken, Penna., Nov. 15, 1902.

EARLY SETTLEMENT OF FRIENDS IN THE VALLEY OF VIRGINIA.

By KIRK BROWN, of Baltimore, Md.

History of the Religious Society of Friends, by Samuel M. Janney, informs that "About the year 1732, Alexander Ross, and company obtained from the Governor and Council at Williamsburg, in Virginia, a grant for one hundred thousand acres of land in that colony, situated near the Opequon creek, a tributary of the Potomac. A settlement was soon after begun by Alexander Ross, Josiah Ballenger, James Wright, Evan Thomas, and other Friends from Elk River, in Maryland."

Nottingham Monthly Meeting Records inform that Alexander Ross, made a public vendue of his personal property, previous to

his removal to the Valley of Virginia 7th. Month 16th. 1732, and proceeded to this fertile valley, where they had secured ample lands to accommodate all the members of the church, or other people that were desirous to join them in the establishment largely composed of Friends.

Soon after the settlement, a Friend's Meeting was organized, and held at the dwelling houses of the members, known as Opeckon Friends Meeting, a branch of and under the care of Nottingham Monthly Meeting Chester County Pennsylvania, (now Cecil county, Maryland). The early history of those meetings was closely allied, many families having relatives belonging to both meetings, the social intercourse was considerable, considering the distance, and the modes of travel through the wilderness.

The undertaking appears to have been to plant a large community of Friends in the Valley. In this they were successful, for many persons migrated from Nottingham, and other Friends Meetings in Chester County, and elsewhere to this inviting land.

The following I take from, the minutes of Nottingham Monthly Meeting of Friends held ye 18th day ye 3rd. Month 1734.

"Alexander Ross has proposed to this meeting on behalf of ffriends att Opeckon, that a meeting of worship be settled amongst them, which is under ye consideration and care of this meeting untill a suitable time to give them a visit."

"At our Monthly Meeting of East Nottingham held ye 17th. day of ye 6th. Month 1734."

"Friends being again mindful of ye request of Friends at Monoquesie, (Frederick county, Maryland) and Opeckon, Do in order to give them a visit appoint Jeremiah Brown, William Kirk, Joseph Enbland, and John Churchman."

"Att our Monthly Meeting held at Nottingham the 21st day of the 10th Month 1734."

The ffriends appointed to visit ffriends at Opeckon, Do report that they have so done, and that they think it would be of service if a meeting were settled there, which this meeting doth acquiesce with, and order that is be sent to ye next Quarterly Meeting.

The above minutes establishes Hopewell Monthly Meeting, set off independent of Nottingham Monthly Meeting, at which date the minutes of Hopewell Monthly Meeting commence, it is unfortunate that the first book of minutes, from 1735 to 1759 were destroyed by fire.

According to the best information I am able to obtain Hopewell Meeting House Frederick County Virginia, was erected 1735, it was the first building erected in the Valley of Virginia, and dedicated to the Worship of God.

Among the early settlers of the Valley of Virginia, and members of the Society of Friends were, Allen, Antram, Beeson, Brown, Barrett, Ballinger, Betturfield, Branson, Bond, Carter, Churchman, Cadwalader, Campbell, Crampton, Dillon, Day, Dodd, Ellis, Eldridge, Fisher, Faucett, Faulkner, Follis, Gregg, Garwood, Griffith, Hogue, Hiatt, Hancher, Hollingsworth, Hayhurst, Hackney, Jolliffe, Kirk, Lupton, Littler, Lewis, McKay (or McCoy,) Milbourne, Mills, Mendenhall, McLun, Moore, Neall, Nead, Osmond, Oneil, Pugh, Parkins, Pickering, Pierson, Ross, Ridgway, Reese, Rubble, Sharp, Sargent, Shinn, Stratton, Steer, Taylor, Thomas, Thornburg, Trimble, Thatcher, Vistal, Wright, Walker, William, Webb, White, and numerous other names that enter into this locality.

The early settlement of Friends, in the Valley, and for some years thereafter, was in Frederick county, and that portion of Frederick, which was in 1801 set off as Jefferson County, mostly in the vicinity of Hopewell, and Winchester, later settlements were made in Clark and Warren counties.

Some years previous to the Revolutionary War, a considerable number of Friends were attracted by the very fertile lands in the Valley to the west of North Mountains, several young men and families migrated to Hampshire and Hardy counties, there established homes for themselves, later Meetings were established.

Providence Friends meeting in Berkeley County (this county was taken from Frederick in 1772) was established 1733. This meeting was also known as Tuscarora, and Mill Creek Meeting. Crooked Run meeting was established 1760, in what is now Warren county, nine miles south of Winchester. Bear Garden Meet-

ing, in 1766, in Hampshire county, nineteen miles North West of Winchester. Berkeley, or Bullskin, in Jefferson county, established 1785, it is 5 miles south east of Charles Town. Ridge meeting in 1805, in Frederick county, four miles north west of Winchester. Dillons Run meeting in 1810, in Hampshire county, six miles west of Capon Bridge, and North River in Hardy county, fifty miles west of Winchester.

Friends in those settlements, as in other localities, were industrious, economical in their habits of living, and having secured their lands at a small cost, soon provided comfortable homes, and were prominent citizens in their communities. They early became interested in schools, and the liberal education of their children, many of whom were later eminent in several of the professions.

As early as 1760, many Friends in those localities became much impressed with the evil of negro slavery, and the belief that all men were created free and equal by God. William Joliffe, set his slaves free in 1770. He was a prominent member, and for many years the Clerk of Hopewell Monthly Meeting. Jackson Allen, and other Friends set their slaves free soon after.

Baltimore Yearly Meeting, of which the Valley of Virginia constituted a part, in 1772, made it a disownable offence for its members to hold slaves.

In a few years after Friends ceased to hold slaves, and manifested considerable interest in the universal freedom of the negro.

After the close of the Revolutionary War, Friends were numerous in the Valley. This event opened up the western country, for settlement, a considerable number of Friends migrated to the west of the Alleghany mountains, forming settlements at Redstone in Fayette county, and Westland, in Washington county, Pennsylvania, established meetings in both localities about 1790, from this time for more than half a century the number of Friends in the Valley, was greatly diminished by this continual westward migration, causing several meetings to be abandoned. Later they migrated to Ohio, and to the far western country, there set up religious meetings, Redstone and Westland were both abandoned by this later migration westward.

It is impossible to ascertain the number of Friends in the Valley, at any stated period, from the early records, but the records of Hopewell meeting, which have been preserved, show this meeting to hav been a large body for a rural district.

—*Kirk Brown.*

We would add, that the address of Mr. Kirk Brown is 1813 North Caroline Street, Baltimore, Maryland, and that he is a collector and genealogist, and is the custodian of many of the Friends Records and those wishing to have their genealogy traced, which came down through these people, can correspond with him. He is also a member of the Maryland Historical Society.

Judge George M. Sharp, one of the Judges of the Supreme bench of Baltimore City, who kindly furnished the above article by Mr. Brown, also furnishes a genealogical account of himself as follows: Daniel Brown, a member of the Society of Friends, came to the Valley of Virginia, from Chester county, Penna. His son Isaac Brawn married Margaret Hite, a daughter of Col. John Hite and they left one son, born August 11, 1770, who was John Brown, he married Elizabeth Richardson, of Maryland, and resided in Winchester, Va. Their daughter Elizabeth married George Sharp, whose son Alpheus P. Sharp, married Ann H. Matthews, who were the parents of Judge Sharp, of Baltimore.—ED.

OUR SCOTCH-IRISH ANCESTORS.

JOSEPH L. MILLER, M. D.

In the story of the nation, as painted by most historians, but two figures stand out prominently in the foreground—the Puritan and the Cavalier; their relative size and coloring depending upon the viewpoint of the writer; upon whether he has lived in the crisp puritanical air of New England, or in the warm chivalrous atmosphere of Virginia. (Cavalier is used here in a broader sense than commonly, and refers to the wealthy, tidewater Virginian, irrespective of his adherence to the Stuart cause.) Be that as it may, yet to the student, who travels out of the beaten paths and

delves among the musty records and bits of local history to be found here and there, it soon appears that a third figure must stand out in the true picture beside the other two. Of less importance, perhaps, than either the New Englander or the Virginian, and combining the characteristics of each in a personality that is splendid and heroic in its simple dignity and strength. A figure that is puritanical in its conformity and adherence to a faith almost as stern as that of the Puritan fathers of Plymouth Bay, and yet it is essentially cavalier in its relations to the home and state.

It is a picture that requires a finer brush than ours and a larger canvas than a few pages of a historical magazine. Such a work has already been begun by Mr. Charles A. Hanna, and if the complete work carries out the promise of the introductory volumes it will be one of the most valuable contributions to the world's history that has been given us for several years.

Although this sketch is intended to be local, it is almost impossible to separate the Scotch-Irishman of Virginia from his brothers of the other states. May the day soon come when he will have his proper place in the story of the Nation's life. And when that sturdy mountaineer stands forth on the canvas beside his resplendent brother, the cavalier, the already glorious picture of "Virginia's embattled and emblozoned deeds" will glow with additional brilliancy. Some recent observers have remarked "that while American history has been chiefly written in New England, that section has not been the chief actor in its events." Like his brother from the tide-water the Scotchman of West Augusta was so busy making history that he did not take time to write it. He died, and today we gather his story only in tradition and chance fragments; and these are so written over and buried beneath the ceaseless writing of the Puritan chroniclers, and the mass of town house records, of even their least important events, that the historian overlooks these scanty fragments in the surfeit of material so easily obtained. Yet after all the Ulsterman, since his coming to the forests of the Alleghenies has stood shoulder to shoulder with the English settler beyond the Blue Ridge, and stamped his name upon every page of the nation's history, and shed his blood on her every battlefield

in such a way that even envy and malice cannot deny to him a great and unselfish influence in the formation of the republic. For nearly half a century he stood alone on a frontier stretching from New York to Georgia, a stalwart sentinel warding away from both Puritan and Cavalier the bloody arms of the evil spirits of the forests. Now and then when his efforts seemed futile to stay the deadly fingers clutching at the throats of his loved ones, and he sent a beseeching cry across the mountains for help, he was more often condemned as a murderer for protecting his home than he was given aid, which was ever at its best inefficient. Regarding his influence upon Virginia and the republic I take the following quotations from Hon. John S. Wise, and John Fiske:

"No settlement ever had a more marked influence upon the destiny of Virginia than had this. No portion of her population has contributed more apparently to her influence in the making of the republic. No people in America have held together until now with more tenacity than this same Scotch-Irish race. They were simple brave folk enured to privation and suffering and with all the thrift and pertinency of the Scotch. From the day they came they planted a barrier of dauntless pioneers between the eastern settlers and the savage—a barrier that was never passed. The history of their warfare with the savage and their conquest of the western wilderness is an unworked field of romance awaiting the birth of another Walter Scot."

Fiske says: "Until recent years, little has been written about the coming of the so-called Scotch-Irish to America, and yet it is an event of scarcely less importance than the exodus of English Puritans to New England and that of English Cavaliers to Virginia." Hanna says of them: "But the position of the Scotch-Irish in the New World was peculiar. They alone, of all the various races in America were present in sufficient numbers in all the colonies to make their influence count; and they alone of all the races had one uniform religion; had experienced together the persecutions by State and Church which had deprived them at home of their civil and religious liberties; and were common heirs to

these principles of freedom and democracy which had been developed in Scotland as nowhere else. At the time of the American Revolution there were nearly seventy communities of the Scotch-Irish in New England, including Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts, and Connecticut; from thirty to forty in New York; fifty to sixty in New Jersey; over one hundred and thirty in Pennsylvania and Delaware; more than a hundred in Virginia, Maryland, and eastern Tennessee; upwards of fifty in North Carolina; and about seventy in South Carolina and Georgia; in all above five hundred communities (exclusive of the English Presbyterian congregations in New York and New Jersey), scattered over practically all the American colonies."

Perhaps we have now awakened enough interest in these early settlers on the American frontier to ask who they were, and whence they came. The answer will carry us back more than a century prior to their appearance on this side of the Atlantic. First let us take up their name—Scotch-Irish. Hanna says: "The term Scotch-Irish is peculiarly American, and in tracing its origin we have epitomized the history of the people to whom it is now applied. The word seems to have come into general use since the Revolution, having been first taken as a race name by many of the individuals of a very large class of people in the United States, descendants of emigrants of Scottish blood from the North of Ireland. The name was not used by the first of these emigrants, neither was it generally applied to them by the people whom they met here. They usually called themselves "Scotch", just as the descendants of their former neighbors in Northern Ireland do today." In a letter written by Rev. John Elder, of Pennsylvania, Feb. 7, 1764, he says: "The Presbyterians, who are the most numerous I imagine of any denomination in the Province, are enraged at their being charged in bulk with these facts under the name of Scotch Irish and other ill-natured titles."

Parker's history of Londonderry, New Hampshire, says: "Although they came to this land from Ireland, where their ancestors had a century before planted themselves, yet retained unmixed

their national Scotch character. Nothing sooner offended them than to be called Irish."

"Mr. Belknap quotes from a letter of Rev. James McGregor to Governor Shute, in which he says: "We are surprised to hear ourselves termed Irish people, when we so frequently ventured our all for the British crown, and liberties against the Irish Papists and gave tests of our loyalty which the government of Ireland required, and are always ready to do the same when required." Col. Bolivar Christian says: "The familiar term 'Scotch-Irish' implies not the amalgamation of distinct Scotch and Irish families, but like "Anglo-Saxon" and "Indo-Britain" simply that the people of one country were transported into the other. The Scotch-Irish settlers in the Valley of Virginia are the direct descendants of the Scotch who colonized the north of Ireland during the religious troubles of Great Britain, from the reign of Henry VIII., and continuously to the time of William IV." It has been said that the antipathy of the Scotch people in Ireland for the true Irish has never been surpassed for 'intensity and bitterness.'"

In the north of Ireland is the province of Ulster composed of the counties of Antrim, Armagh, Cavan, Donegal, Down, Fermanagh, Londonderry, Monaghan, and Tyrone—eight and a half thousand square miles surrounded on three sides by the sea. Though a part of Ireland it has been Scotch territory since 1611, when James I., after the unsuccessful rebellion of the Earls of Tyrconnel and Tyrone, began planting the rebellious province from the North of England and Scotland. The object of this was to have a Protestant population that should out number the Catholic Irish, and so become the controlling element in the province. Fiske says, "The settlers were picked men and women of the most excellent sort. By the middle of the seventeenth century there were three hundred thousand of them in Ulster. That province had been the most neglected part of the Island, a wilderness of bogs and fens; they transformed it into a garden. They also established manufacturers of woolens and linens, which have since been famous throughout the world. By the beginning of the eighteenth century their num-

bers had risen to nearly a million. Their social condition was not that of peasants; they were intelligent yeomanry and artisans. In a document signed in 1718 by a miscellaneous group of 319 men only 13 made their mark, while 306 wrote their names in full. Nothing like that could have happened at that time in any other part of the British empire, hardly even in New England." Regarding the colonists who early settled in Ulster, Rev. Andrew Stewart, a contemporaneous chronicler, says: "Of the English not many came over, for it is to be observed that being a great deal more tenderly bred at home in England, and entertained in better quarters than they could find in Ireland, they were unwilling to flock thither except to good land, such as they had before at home, or to good cities where they might trade; both of which, in those days, were scarce enough here .....The King, too, had a natural love to have Ireland planted with Scots, as being, besides their loyalty, of a middle temper between the English tender and the Irish rude breeding, and a great deal more likely to adventure to plant Ulster." Among others he mentions the Ellises, Wilsons, Hills, Conways, and Leslies, "gentlemen of England and worthy persons"; and the Grahams, Hamiltons, Forbes, Stuarts, Hendersons, Montgomerys, Alexanders, Shaws, Moores, Boyds, Baileys, Barclays and others, "knights and gentlemen of Scotland whose posterity hold good to this day." And here and there in the Virginias, Kentucky, Tennessee, the Carolinas and other states peopled by the children of these Ulster colonists, these time honored names of "knights and gentlemen of Scotland" and borne with honor by their lineal descendants, who still "hold good to this day,'

But these sturdy Ulstermen did not gain freedom from molestation, by the Church of England, by their settlement in the Irish wilderness. Although in the Revolution of 1688, they sided with the party that deposed the Catholic Stuart Kings and placed the Presbyterian prince, William of Orange, upon the throne, yet their condition was left "endurable only for its contrast with their former sufferings." In 1704 and succeeding years laws were passed forbidding them to keep their schools, annulling marriages performed by their Presbyterian ministers, not allowing them to hold

any office higher than that of petty constable, tithes and taxes extorted from their impoverished estates to support the esablished church, and many other things equally annoying, all combined to make them a restless and unhappy people. Hoping that it was but temporary they endured it for nearly a score of years, but at last they listened to the whisperings of hope that were wafted across the storm-tossed Atlantic, that in the forests of America others had found a safe refuge from their persecutors; so in 1719 began the exodus from Ulster to America, and continued in increasing numbers until the passage of the Act of Toleration for Ireland in 1782. Fiske thinks that from 1730 to 1770 not less than half a million people came from Ulster to America, making about one-sixth of its population at the time of the Revolution.

Those who came to Virginia first settled in Pennsylvania; but the jealousy of the original settlers, and the tender memories of their childhood's home far away in the Scottish Highlands, awakened by the hazy outlines and towering peaks of the Alleghenies in the blue distance, soon drove them onward and southward to seek a home in those far away mountains and the beautiful valley at their feet. Though in 1716 Governor Spottswood and his Knights of the Golden Horseshoe had been the first white men to look upon its loveliness, and ten years later Joist Hite and a few of his countrymen had settled in the lower valley; it was yet a virgin land whose primeval silence was broken only by the murmur of its limpid streams, the call of birds and the soughing of the wind through the forests, when John Lewis and his little band of pioneers settled in the upper valley. From this time on they came rapidly and soon had peopled all that part of Virginia from whence spring the waters of the James and Roanoke, the Greenbrier and Holston, the Shenandoah and Opequon. From that time began the struggle for the conquest of the land from the forests and from its savage owners—a struggle that lasted for nearly three quarters of a century and cost hundreds of lives and untold sacrifice.

A list of those colonists would be a list of the familiar names of our friends and cousins. Many places in the Virginias, Kentucky and the Carolinas are found today communities with the old Scotch

names, religion, manners, and traditions but little changed by the lapse of time. In the long winter evenings, when the fire burns low, these descendants of those sturdy old pioneers repeat the oft recounted tales of those harrowing days when the savages crept as stealthily as a panther upon their homes with scalping knife and torch to murder and destroy; and when companies of "Rangers", "Volunteers," or "Independents" armed and equipped, each man at his own expense, slipped as stealthily through the dark forest to revenge the murder of their friends and families. Or mayhap it is a tale of the brave days of old when their great grandsires fought with the youthful Washington under the illfated Braddock Great Meadows, or later helped Lewis to win the opening battle of the Revolution at Point Pleasant in '74. Perhaps they were numbered in the Scotch-Irish army of Sevier, Shelby, and Campbell that destroyed Ferguson's army at Kings mountain, which Thomas Jefferson said was "the joyful enunciation of that turn in the tide of success, which stamped the Revolutionary War with the seal of Independence"; or may be they were Morgan's men and helped to give Tarleton the thrashing at the Cow Pens, that he so richly deserved and never forgot, and who later helped win the day at Saratoga. Washington recognizzed their worth, for he recommended to Congress to make Andrew Lewis commander in chief of the American armies, and when he was hardest pressed he declared that if the worst came to the worst he could retire to the mountains of West Augusta and there prolong the struggle indefinitely. One might multiply at length a list of the times and places, where the Scotch-Irish of America almost to a man, showed their patriotism and valor. And the same may be said of the names of those patriots. A list that would contain such names as: Andrew Lewis, Patrick Henry, Daniel Morgan, George Rogers Clark, John Craig, the McDowe'ls, the Shelbys, Andrew Jackson, John C. Calhoun, Winfield Scott, Jefferson Davis, and a host of others almost as well known. Men who have served and men who have commanded on the battlefield; men who have sat in the legislative halls of states and of the nation; men who have been governors of states and presidents of many states. These are the men who trace their origin to those

old Scotch colonists of Virginia. Stonewall Jackson was a marked type of their strong individuality and deep convictions; and from them also came the knightly J. E. B. Stuart—Lee's great generals.

So it should be something of worth to us that we are sprung from those vigorous old Ulstermen, who honestly and with simple dignity filled up the measure of life, and then lay down to their dreamless sleep in the quiet valley graveyards. And let us, their descendants, endeavor to keep fresh in our hearts the memory of their heroic lies. —*Jos. Lyon Miller.*

A CHRONOLOGICAL SKETCH OF COLONEL DAVID SHEPHERD.

The author of the article upon Colonel David Shepherd in the April number of this Magazine urges those who possess information about their ancestors, to benefit others by sharing it.

This suggestion has decided me to send a chronological sketch of my great-great gradfather, Colonel Davis Shepherd to the same magazine, as I am convinced by that meagre account, that really little is known, of the very important position he filled, and the extraordinary labors he performed, in protecting the frontier.

It is impossible in a mazagine, to give a complete account of even the chief events of Colonel Shepherd's life, or to quote freely from the many Virginia histories which contain records of his services to his country and his heroic defense of Fort Henry.

These histories are accessible to all students: therefore this sketch will be chiefly confined to original records and to the Shepherd manuscripts.

Other records will be quoted simply to corroborate or complete the chain of proof.

The Wisconsin Historical Society through the devotion and zeal of Mr. Lyman C. Draper, came into possession of a very rare and valuable collection of manuscripts. In this collection are five (5) large volumes of Col. David Shepherd's own reports, as a commissioned colonel of the militia of that district; also his reports as the County Lieutenant of Ohio county concerning the condition of the

frontier; and his detailed report of the famous siege of Fort Henry, to his superior officer, General Hand, at Fort Pitt.

There are also among these manuscripts, many valuable letters to Colonel Shepherd from General Hand, General George Rogers Clarke, Thomas Jefferson, Patrick Henry and many other leaders in the Revolutionary War, also many letters from his brother, Captain Abraham Shepherd.

In this collection of manuscripts is included the reports of his sons-in-law, Francis Duke (husband of Sarah Shepherd) who was killed at Fort Henry and of William McIntire, husband of Elizabeth Shepherd, who was Quarter-Master during the Coshocton campaign and was pay master of Fort Henry and Fort Shepherd.

From 1770 to 1795, Colonel Shepherd was one of the dominant figures in that region out of which several states have since been formed. For twenty-five years he was held responsible for the safety and protection of the frontier.

The proof of this statement may be found in The American Archives, The Virginia State Calendar, and in the orders from Congress sent to him personally, and in letters from General Knox, Secretary of War and Patrick Henry, Governor of Virginia and in his own reports. See Shepherd Mss.

In 1900 I made a pious pilgrimage to the Wisconsin Historical Society Library to examine the manuscripts of my ancestors, Colonel David Shepherd and Major Wm. McIntire.

As I then read the proofs of their devotion to their heroic duties and the terrible sacrifices they had made, it grieved me to think their own descendants had neglected to keep green the memory of their brave deeds.

David Shepherd was the eldest son of Captain Thomas Shepherd and Elizabeth Van Meter. That Thomas Shepherd came from England is the general opinion, but where he first settled in America is uncertain, as some writers sa he came from Annapolis, others say he came from York, Penna. All authorities agree that he came with Joist Hite to Virginia in 1732 and settled in Berkeley county.

The Van Meters were wealthy Hollanders already settled in

Mecklenburg, afterwards Shepherdstown where Joist Hite arrived with his party of sixteen families.

Jan (John) Van Meter, erroneously stated to have "died young," the eldest child of Kreijn Janse Van Meter, was the first white man to cross the Blue Ridge while on the war-path with the Delaware Indians against the Catawbas. He wrote an account of this expedition. Vir. His. Mag. Vol. 3.

This Jan Van Meter is called John the "Indian Trader." He advised his sons to go to Virginia and secure the beautiful land which had so charmed him when seen by him in 1725.

In 1729 his four sons, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and John went to Virginia and in 1730 secured a grant of forty thousand acres of land from Governor Gooch. (See land records in Richmond.) John's share was in Berkeley county, and he was called "John the first of Berkeley."

John Van Meter died it is said at Winchester as his will was probated there, August 30, 1745. He left a large estate, his share of the original grant, bequeathing it to his wife, (Margaret, 2nd wife, 1st wife unknown) and eleven children.

To his daughter Elizabeth wife of Captain Thomas Shepherd, he left three (3) hundred acres of the home estate, and another estate in Prince George's County in the Province of Maryland called "Pelmel" which is a part of "Antietum Bottom" on the Potowmack river.

Thomas Shepherd was one of the executors of his father-in-law's will. In 1762 Thomas Shepherd laid out some of his land in town lots and the town was incorporated and called Shepherdstown. Hennings Statutes.

Captain Shepherd, (Thomas) received a large grant of land from Lord Fairfax, the deed is dated June 12, 1751.

Captain Thomas Shepherd made his will March 23, 1776. He died soon after and the will was probated in Martinsburg, Va., August 20th, 1776.

His estate was divided among his wife Elizabeth and his ten children, five sons, David, William, John, Thomas, Abraham and five daughters, Susanna, Mary, Martha, Sarah nd Elizabeth.

David received a small portion in his father's will, because he had, at the time of his father's death acquired a large estate near Wheeling. This is a condensed statement of Colonel David Shepherd's ancestry.

The following is a chronological arrangement of some of the chief events of David Shepherd's life with proofs.

David Shepherd was born in the stone house called "The Fort" in Shepherdstown.

1734 January—Draper's notes. Wis. His. Soc. Vol. 2, p. 37.

1756 Married Rachel Teague. Draper's Notes.

1758 William, eldest son was born. Draper's Notes.

1758 Elector of Frederick County, Va., voted for General Washington for Burgess. See letters to Washington.

1761 June 25—Paid his land tax to Th. Hatch.

1763 Sept. 11—Moses, his youngest son was born.

1763 April 3—Paid county and parish "levy" to Wm. Helms.

1767 May Court of Frederick county he receiver fifty pounds of tobacco for services as witness. Shepherd Mss.

1767 Paid to Samuel Oldham five pounds for his (D. Shepherd's) dues for the year. Original receipt.

1769 Paid to Samuel Oldham 179 pounds for levy due for the year. Shepherd's Mss.

1770 Paid fifteen pounds for levy taxes to Samuel Oldham.

1770 David Shepherd left Shepherdstown with his family and settled near Wheeling at the Forks of Big and Little Wheeling creek. Here he built Shepherd's Fort and block house. Shepherd's Mss.

1772 June 16—Paid quit rent on land for years 1768, '69, '70, '71, to Robert Stevens. Shepherd Mss.

1773 William McIntire, son of Major William McIntire and Elizabeth Shepherd, grandson of Col. Shepherd was born near Wheeling. Preston Papers.

1774 March 25—David Shepherd received a warrant from Lord Dunmore for 1063 acres of land under the King of Great Britain's proclamation of 1763, lying in the forks of Wheeling in the county

of Augusta. This warrant was signed by Gov. Benjamin Harrison, March 18th, 1784. Land Records.

1775 March 20, May 16th, at Fort Pitt as a member of Augusta County Executive Committee of safety.

1776 March 23—Captain Thomas Shepherd made his will which was probated August 20th, in Martinsburg. See records in Martinsburg.

1776 Sept. 4—David Shepherd was appointed Commissary officer for all the frontier by the order signed by Dorsey Pentecost.

1776 David Shepherd was appointed County Lieutenant of Ohio County, by Gov. Patrick Henry. This was a military colony formed out of West Augusta by Act of Legislature. All the county officers were military officers. Court records.

1776 Charles Simmes, Secretary of Virginia, directed Col. Shepherd to raise companies of militia under instructions of the Convention of 1776 and to administer the oath. Court records.

1777 January 6th—Took the oath as a justice of the county court at Black's Cabin.

1777 January 26th and March 3d—Courts were held. David Shepherd "Gentlemen" present and all the proceedings were signed by him. Court Records.

1777 March 4th—Commissioned Commander in Chief of Ohio County.

1777 June 2nd—Took the oath as Colonel in open Military Court.

1777 July 6th—Was appointed County Lieutenant of Ohio county. Court Records.

1777 August—General Hand ordered Colonel Shepherd to leave Fort Shepherd and take command at Wheeling as the Indians were expected. Fort Shepherd was destroyed by the Indians.

August 22—Colonel Shepherd wrote General Hand: "In obedience to your orders I have called in all the men to this place then removed my family likewise, but there seems great confusion in the county. We are repairing the fort as fast as possible and shall soon have it, Indian Proof, except they scale the Stockades."

1777 August 31-Sept. 1st—For twenty-three hours under command of Colonel Shepherd, thirty-five men assisted by their brave

wives and daughters (who loaded guns and moulded bullets) resisted the attack of the Indians. Col. Shepherd's own report is as follows: "Lieutenant and fourteen privates killed. 1 Captain and four privates wounded. By the best judges here who have seen the plans laid by the Indians and their breast works and blinds in the late action, it is thought their numbers must not have been less than between two and three hundred. The destruction of cattle is not yet ascertainable. A number of the distressed families have moved off, yet a number remain for want of horses."

1777 Colonel Shepherd's son William and son-in-law Francis Duke were killed at this siege.

1777 Sept. 15th—Colonel Shepherd asks General Hand to relieve the militia who were worn out, by a company of regulars. Major Chew was sent in response to this request. Shepherd Mss.

1777. Oct 3d—Col. Shepherd writes to General Hand: "Your timely relief by Major Chew was very acceptable as we could not bury the dead before he came." Major Chew wrote, to General Hand (same date) "Since my arrival Col. Shepherd and myself marched and buried these unfortunate men, in the late action, a moving sight, cruelly butchered even after death."

1777. Was the far famed "bloody year". It was also called the year of the three sevens. It was the most terrible year in the annals of the West." De Haas. Through all Colonel Shepherd was the guiding and protecting spirit, although suffering great losses of life in his family and his property, through the destruction of Fort Shepherd Sept. 27th, which was burned by the Indians. He removed his large family to Redstone. De Haas.

The greatest loss was the death of his son William and his son-in-law Francis Duke.

His son William was only in his twentieth year yet left a widow Rebecca McCulloch, sister of Hugh McCulloch. His child was a daughter named Elizabeth. She is mentioned in her grandfather's will.

1777. Sept. 1—Colonel Shepherd's son-in-law, Francis Duke, who was killed at the siege of Fort Henry, was the second son of John Duke, an early settler of Berkeley County, Virginia.

Francis Duke was born near Ballymoney, Ireland, Feb. 11, 1751, and married Sarah, daughter of Col. Shepherd about 1773. Francis Duke and his wife located at Beech Bottom, twelve miles below Wheeling. During the Indian troubles, Col. Shepherd as County Lieutenant, had caused the erection of block houses in the vicinity for the safety of the settlers. One of these was at Beech Bottom where Francis Duke was Commissary and in charge of the Fort.

Learning of the attack upon Fort Henry he hurried from Beech Bottom to assist in the defence of Fort Henry. As he dashed toward the Fort coming suddenly upon the Indians, he was shot down before he could reach the gate. He was so near that the Indians did not venture for his scalp until after dark, when he was dragged into one of the cabins and scalped and his body stripped. His widow, Sarah, and two sons, John and Francis, survived him. His widow afterwards married Levi B. Springer. See Draper's Notes. Withers and DeHaas.

1778. Monday, April 6—Col. Shepherd was one of the "Gentlemen Justices" present at Court. At this Court he was ordered to officiate as High Sheriff and executed a bond of office for five hundred pounds.

At the same court he also gave bond of three thousand pounds for his faithful collecting and accounting of all dues. His uncle Solomon Hedges was one of his sureties at Wheeling. Court Records.

1779. Oct. 8—Col. Shepherd was President of a Court Martial. Shepherd Mss.

1780. Sept. 16-23—He was present at a Peace Conference held with the Delaware Indians at Fort Pitt. Shepherd Letters.

1780. Oct. 17—Col. Shepherd was a petitioner for the opening of a New State west of the Alleghenies.

1780. Oct. 18—"Sister Sarah, (Mrs. Thornburgh) was buried this day." Letter from Abraham Shepherd.

1781. April 10-28—Coshocton Campaign. The following is copied from Vol. 4 of Shepherd's Mss. "Pay Roll of the Field and Staff officers belonging to the Militia of the State of Virginia in the Expedition to Coshocton in the service of the United States,

commanded by Col. Shepherd, S. McCulloch, Major, Isaac Meek, Aujutant, William McIntire, Quartermaster, James Leman, Sergeant-Major, Jonathan Zane, spy. General Brodhead was induced to aid in this attack against the Indians on the Muskingum.

General Brodhead left Fort Pitt with 150 regulars and became Commander-in-Chief. This Coshocton Campaign was most important and far-reaching in its results as it pushed the Delawares back from the Muskingum and Tuscarawas and they never returned. Windsor's Western Movement.

1783-84-85 Col. Shepherd was a member of the Virginia Legislature.

1783. June 23—Col. Shepherd entered one thousand acres of land on the Ohio River three miles above the mouth of the Middle Island Creek, the grant including the improvements made in 1771. Shepherd Mss. Land Records.

1786. Rebuilt Fort Shepherd and brought back his family from Redstone. DeHaas.

1788. Col. David Shepherd was constituted one of the trustees of Randolph Academy. 12 Hen. 661.

1789. June—His official prestige is proved by the following: Governor Beverly Randolph wrote to Col. Shepherd advising the discharge of all officers connected with the County Government and act for the United States instead of for Virginia. Shepherd Mss.

1790. Fort Shepherd was again reconstructed and made stronger with bastions at the corners and port holes along the sides. DeHaas. In 1798 Col. Moses Shepherd erected the handsome stone mansion called "Monument Place" on the very spot where the old Fort Shepherd was built by his father.

1791. March 3. May 27—Col. Shepherd received letters of instructions regarding the protection of the frontier from General Knox, Secretary of War. See Letters.

1791. May 6—A letter from Major John Neville of Fort Pitt, addressed to his "Dear old friend". Shepherd Mss.

1792. Feb. 25—General Washington, then President of the

United States, wrote to Col. Shepherd about his Round Bottom grant of land as follows:

Philadelphia, Feb. 25, 1792.

Sir:—

I thank you for the information respecting the intention of the Tomlinsons and others to dispute my title to a tract of land called Round Bottom. I wish these persons and any others who may be disposed to dispute my title to that land to be informed in the most explicit and pointed manner that it is my fixed determination to defend at all events every inch of that land which is within the lines of my patent. If therefore any encroachments are made thereon the person, or persons, by whom they are made may depend upon being prosecuted as long as there shall be a shadow of right or justice in so doing. I have nothing to say respecting any surveys which may be made *without* the lines of my patent, but let them beware of the consequences of coming within them.

I am, sir, With very great esteem,

Your most obedient servant,

GEO. WASHINGTON.

To Col. David Shepherd.

—Shepherd Mss.

See West Va. His. Mag. Jan. 1902, page 73 for account of Gen. Washington's patent for Round Bottom.

1792. April—Major William McIntire, son-in-law of Col. Shepherd and husband of Elizabeth Shepherd, was killed while on an expedition with Simon Kenton against the Miami Indians, near Limestone, Ky. The Indians were led by Tecumseh. Shepherd Mss.

1793. Jan. 17—Col. Shepherd wrote to Gen. Wayne requesting instructions concerning the spies employed. Shepherd Mss.

1793. April—Gen. Wayne wrote to Col. Shepherd from Headquarters Legion Hill.

1793. Col. Shepherd commanded the expedition againsts the Tuscarawas.

1795. January 20—Colonel Shepherd made his will. This clause in his will (full text given below) "But in case, he (Moses)

should die without an heir (he had no children) the old plantation is to be sold so as to be divided equally between my three daughters or their surviving heirs." This clause was the cause of a celebrated law suit seventy-five years after his death. His sons Moses's wife, Mrs. Lydia Cruger enjoyed through her husband's will, a life interest. She survived her first husband thirty-five years as she was one hundred and two years old at her death in 1867. The estate had to be settled by a law suit and after seventy-five years the heirs numbered hundreds and were of the fourth and fifth generations. Will.

In the name of God, amen.

I, David Shepherd, of Ohio County, and State of Virginia, being in body, but of sound and perfect mind and memory, blessed by Almighty God for the same do make and publish this my last will and testament in manner and form following. That is to say, I will and bequeath to my beloved wife Rachel Shepherd all the plantation on which I now live in the forks of Wheeling Creek, during her life, and her feather-bed and furniture, likewise her choice of three cows and two work horses, and a plow and a takel. Also I will and bequeath to my wife, one mulatto girl named Nancy, and one negro man named Timothy, as also all her common and teatable furniture. I also will and bequeath to my daughter Elizabeth Lee during her life time, all that parcel of land lying and bounded as follows: that is to say—beginning at the old Grist mill dam, then running with the line of Moses Shepherd to the sugar tree corner as mentioned in his, thence with the original, across Peter's run, into Graig's Fork, thence down said creek unto the beginning more or less to hold during her natural life, and then to descend to the heirs of William McIntire deceased. I likewise will unto my three daughters, viz.: Elizabeth Lee, Sarah Springer and Ruth Mills, all the remaining part of my estate, after my just debts and legacies and funeral expenses are paid, to be equally divided among them. My will is that the Presbyterian church have free privileges to build places for public worship, and the purpose of burying their dead on the lot laid out for them, but for no other purpose. I also will and bequeath to my son

Moses Shepherd all that part or tract of land with all the appurtenances that lie below Little Wheeling and up as far as the old Grist mill dam, thence with a straight line near N. W. corner to a sugar tree corner to the original tract, thence down the original tract to the beginning at the saw mill, likewise after the death of his mother to have and the whole of the old plantation, he paying to his sisters each one hundred pounds Virginia currency, to be paid three years after he shall enter on the premises. But in case he should die without an heir, the old plantation is to be sold so as to be divided equally between my three daughters, or their surviving heirs. I likewise will and bequeath unto my Grand-daughter Elizabeth Shepherd, twenty-five pounds of Virginia currency, to be paid out of the money arising from the sale of my personal property. I hereby appoint sole executors of this my last will and testament, Moses Shepherd and John Mills, hereby revoking all former wills by me made,—in witness whereof, I have set my hand and seal this 20th day of January, the year of our Lord 1795.

DAVID SHEPHERD. (*Seal.*)

Signed, sealed, published and delivered by the above-named David Shepherd as his last will and testament in the presence of us who have hereunto our names as witnesses in the presence of the testator.

William Flabavan, Abner Springer.
Francis Duke, William McIntire.

A copy, teste: Moses Chapline.

A copy teste: John McCulloch, Clerk.

My father, Rev. Dr. Thomas McIntire, as one of the heirs of Elizabeth, was called frequently to Wheeling during the law suit and received quite a sum as an heir. I have his copy of the proceedings which contains the names of all the descendants of the three daughters.

1795. February 2—Colonel Shepherd died on his "old plantation in Fort Shepherd and was buried in the grave-yard by the old stone church on Wheeling Creek, which were bequeathed by him.

The following description of Colonel Shepherd was given by his daughter-in-law, Lydia Cruger, to Mr. Lyman C. Draper.

"Colonel Shepherd was an Episcopalian, a little short of six feet, corpulent 240 pounds, light complexion, blue eyes, great good sense, brave, honest, liberal, benevolent, cheerful, and good natured and greatly beloved."

Colonel Shepherd held the offices of Justice, High Sheriff, County Lieutenant and Colonel of Militia all at the same time. He performed all the varied duties of these offices during the most perilous time in the history of our country and in the most dangerous part of the country, with great bravery and patriotic devotion and with perfect satisfaction to his superior officers. See the letters in Shepherd Mss. It is a most singular fact that histories, which are accepted as authorities have so confused and perverted facts as to have deprived this patriot of much of his justly deserved fame, and have attributed his brave deeds and words to others who could not possibly have performed these deeds because they did not hold the offices, which his own papers and public records prove he held.

Therefore this article has been inspired by the desire of one of his descendants, to retrieve in a limited way, the neglect of which we can, most justly be accused.

This is a grateful and dutiful tribute to my great-great grandfather, Colonel Shepherd and great-grandfather Major William McIntire, who were constantly associated together for many years, in the performance of their public duties.

HARRIET MCINTIRE FOSTER,
Hon. State Regent Indiana D. A. R.

REV. JAMES MOORE BROWN, D. D.

It would require a volume of many pages to do adequate justice to the memory of this grand and useful man. The Brown relationship, of which he was an illustrious member, trace their ancestory, on the paternal side to two brothers, John and Henry Brown, who came from England to Virginia, under the auspices of their kinsmen, Sir William Brown, one of the original Virginia Company. Frequent references to John and Henry Brown in Vol. 1st of Hennings Statutes justifies the inference, they were persons of notable influence.

In the same volume p. 81, mention is made of Sir Wm. Brown, as member of council for Virginia, under Chester May 23rd, 1609.

In 1755 Henry Brown, was living on the banks of the Roanoke river a few miles from what is now Salem, Va. During the autumn of that year, after Braddock's defeat, a memorable event occurred in the family history. Henry Brown (2), was with his father at the then frontier home, and they virtually slept on their arms, being so liable to Indian incursions.

One morning Henry Brown, Junior, noticed Moccasin tracks, returned at once to the house and informed his father, and while the two were in the act of examining their guns, five Shawnee Indians fired upon them through the door and the windows.

The father and mother were killed instantly. Henry Junior, shot the Chief dead as he entered the door, clubbed his gun and killed another warrior, and with the assistance of his brother Robert Brown forced the surviving Indians to retreat. Soon after-

wards Henry Brown, Junior, went to Williamsburg, and received as bounty, thirty or more pounds, offered for Indian scalps taken by private citizens. Gov. Dinwiddie offered him a commission in the army. This Mr. Brown declined, because of the exposed condition of his family and possessions. About this time too he changed homes, going to Bedford county, and settled on Otter creek, where he passed the remainder of his life.

Henry Brown, Jr., was married twice, his second marriage being with Alice Baird, of North Carolina, whose family had migrated from Belfast, Ireland.

The third son of this marriage was named Samuel, born November 18, 1766. He became a Presbyterian minister and on December 9th, 1798, married May Moore, the Indian Captive. Dr. James M. Brown was their eldest son, born Sept. 13, 1799.

September 26, 1826, Dr Brown married Miss Ann Bell, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John Bell, of Winchester, Va. Mr. Bell was a prominent merchant, and influential Christian man.

They were the parents of six children in the order named: Samuel H. Brown, born Dec. 23, 1827, died July, 1857; Maria Elizabeth, born Dec. 2, 1829, died in early childhood; John Calvin, born October 10, 1831; James Madison, born Nov. 7, 1834, died May 15, 1862; Mary Roberta Lavina, born Sept. 5, 1839, died April 26, 1862; William Sherrard, born Sept. 11th, 1876, died June, 1859. Their mother, Mrs. Ann Brown, died November 13th, 1885.

One of the more notable names in the annals of the West Virginia pulpit, and the higher educational interests of the Kanawha Valley is that of the Rev. Dr. James M. Brown.

He was a native of Rockbridge county, Virginia, the eldest son of Rev. Samuel Brown Sen., and Mary Moore, his wife, the Indian Captive, and was born near Brownsburg, September 13, 1799. He graduated at Washington College, Lexington, Va.; studied theology under the supervision of Rev. George A. Baxter, D. D., and was licensed by Lexington Presbytery, April 23rd, 1824.

The following August he visited the churches of Gerardstown, Tuscarora and Falling Waters, in Berkeley county, W. Va., and served them as stated supply, until September 30th, 1826, when

he was installed their pastor. In the service of their churches he labored earnestly, faithfully and successfully nine more years as pastor, when in 1835, at the earnest and joint solicitation of the synod of Virginia and North Carolina, he became their agent in the cause of foreign missions.

As a more central location for his new sphere of service, he moved his family to Prince Edward county, Va. As missionary agent, he labored two years with some kind of industry and conspicuous efficiency, throughout the States of Virginia and North Carolina.

In April, 1837, he was called to the pastorate of the church of Kanawha, then including the present churches of Charleston and Kanawha Salines, now W. Va., and the regions thereabouts. For twenty-five years, he preached here with "many signs following," beloved more and more by all who knew him. Then too with his usual energy and activity as a servant of Christ, he preached through all the surrounding regions for a radius of a hundred miles or more, as opportunities invited.

He died the 7th of June, 1862, and his grave is in the Frankfort cemetery, Greenbrier county, W. Va.

As a man, as a citizen and as a friend, Dr. Brown was ever held in the highest esteem by his friends and ministerial brethren.

In church deliberations he was a wise counsellor, and for twenty five years or more was a distinguished *primus inter pares* in the synod of Virginia.

Wherever it was possible for him to do so, without compromising the truth as it is in Jesus, it was a paramount aim to live peaceably with all men. His judgment was regarded as almost infallible in church affairs. This is to be accounted for, not only because of his finely poised intellectual powers but rather because he seemed to be a character having himself in subjection. He was not without the passions of other men, as a very eminent admirer of his regarded him, but he had these passions so completely subdued, that to some he seemed a "man without the passions of other men". As a preacher he was solid and earnest and powerfully persuasive, presenting the great and minor points of the gospel without meretricious adornment but with convincing point and vigor.

The Rev. Stuart Robinson made this true and ever memorable remark about the subject of this historical memoir: Of all the preachers, we have ever known, Dr. Brown might apply to himself, the language of Paul: "I determine to know nothing among you save Jesus Christ, and him crucified." Among the salient features of Dr. Brown's personal history, special notice should be had of the fact that his maternal ancestors were Scotch-Irish pure and simple. As to the Scotch-Irish whence Doctor Brown derives his lineage, in part, George Bancroft, the chiefest of all American historians makes this startling but truthful assertion: "We shall find the first voice publicly raised in America, to dissolve all connection with Great Britain not from the Puritans of New England, or the Dutch of New York, or the planters of Virginia, but from the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians." Vol. 5, p. 77.

The full significance of Bancroft's oracular dictum is hard to apprehend and may not be justly comprehended until the latest syllable of recorded times be in evidence. Just here let me remind my courteous readers of a fact they will be glad to hear of if they feel inclined to make a somewhat special study of our Scotch-Irish ancestors. They will find enough to satisfy reasonable desires in the annals of Augusta county. This book prepared by the Hon. Joseph A. Waddell, Staunton, Va. gives the most satisfactory explanation I have ever read anywhere of the question, "Who are the Scotch-Irish?" As such a large element of our West Virginia people, we of Scotch-Irish lineage the annals of Augusta county should have a place in every clerk's office in West Virginia. And in the possession of all the pioneer families. In all time to come as questions of local and family history may arise, Mr. Waddell writes thus and so, will be the satisfactory end of all successful controversy in many a mooted affair relevant to pioneer history.

A. Waddell "*dixit*" will silence a multitude of useless conjecture, and ingenious genealogical theories. Dr. Brown's maternal lineage is traceable remotely to Samuel Rutherford, of blessed fame in Scottish religious annals, while his latter maternal lineage is briefly traced as follows: To James Moore, who though born in Ireland, was of Scottish descent. About 1726 two

brothers, James and Joseph Moore, migrated from the north of Ireland and located in Pennsylvania. Here James Moore met and married Miss Jane Walker, the fourth child of John Walker, of Wigton, Scotland. Mr. Walker at first moved to the north of Ireland and thence to Pennsylvania.

For some years after his marriage James Moore resided in the Nottingham congregation, of Pennsylvania. In the meantime Mrs. Moore's father, John Walker, moved to Rockbridge county, Va., and settled on Walker's creek, and a few years thereafter James Moore with wife and four children, followed, taking up his residence near-by, and thus making a part of the settlement facetiously known to the Rockbridge pioneers as "the Creek nation."

At the new home six more children were added to James Moore's thus consisting of five sons and five daughters. James Moore, Jr., was the sixth child. Upon his marriage with Martha Poage, of Rockbridge county, he lived some years at Newell Tavern, near the Natural Bridge, Va., where four of his children were born—John, James, Jane and Joseph.

James Moore, Jr., became somewhat dissatisfied with his Rockbridge home, feeling that his relatives and neighbors had become rather to thick to thrive as he would like. He selected a place in the Valley of the Bluestone, a tributary of New river. Here he cleared a few acres, reared a log cabin and in the autumn of 1775 moved his family thereto. For several years affairs went well with him, he had for neighbors, Absalom Looney, a mile below and John Poage, two and a half miles above. To Mr. Moore, the Bluestone valley was just what he liked and hoped for, being for so long out of the way of the Indian raids heretofore, it seemed secure alike from the vexations of all men whether civilized or savage. Thus Mr. Moore's highest aims were realized, all seemed so prosperous and relatively quiet for nine years in succession.

In 1784, James Moore, his son, the third of the name at the age of 14 years, was captured by Indians lead by Black Wolf, and remained in captivity for years, and then on July 17, 1786, James Moore, Sen., himself was slain, his dwelling was burned and his family of nine remaining children broken up.

The fifth member of this family was Mary Moore, the mother of Dr. James M. Brown. She was born in 1777, and so it appears that the first nine years of her life were passed in alternate solitude and alarm.

Full mention of the events of Mary Moore's captivity will not be attempted in this article. Our interested readers can find the story beautifully told in the Captives of Abbs Valley. In that book Dr. Brown himself tells the story of his mother's captivity as he heard it told by her. So far as is known and read by me, nothing has appeared in all the centuries of the Christian era more interesting than the "short and simple annals" of this dutiful pious girl, Mary Moore, the Indian captive.

In 1788, the riotous Indians after reaching Detroit, sold Mary Moore to one Stogwell, at Frenchtown, near the western end of Lake Erie, the consideration being a half gallon of rum. Stogwell would not take a ransom for her, nor show her any indulgence, but employed her as a servant, with scant clothing and meagre fare.

A thrilling account of her ransom and return to Virginia friends was given by her brother, James Moore, the third of the name, while telling of his own capture and redemption.

In 1839, this gentleman, James Moore, the captive was residing in the Bluestone valley, the scene of his boyhood, where his father was slain, and his early home so sadly destroyed.

It was in 1839 that the Rev. James Morrison visited Mr. James Moore, and to Mr. Morrison he gave a very full and satisfactory narrative which may be seen and read in Foote's Sketches of Virginia, first series. James Moore, the third, died in 1848.

Mary Moore was in captivity about three years. On the day of her capture, she saved two copies of the New Testament from being burned with her home, and carried them with her. One was taken away from her by mischievous Indian girls. The other she contrived to conseal and retain until an old Indian forbid further molestation by Indian youngsters. He had frequently had Mary to read to him, remarking he wanted "to hear the book talk."

After suffering personal treatment from white people more cru-

el to her than the Indians had been, she was at last visited by her brother James, when he found his sister Mary clothed in rags, and her body sore with cruel blows. The brother and sister were ransomed by Thomas Evans, October, 1789, and restored to relatives in the Virginia valley. Their first resting place was at the home of William McPheeters, ten miles southwest of Staunton, Va.

Shortly after her return, Mary went to live with her uncle Joseph Walker.

At the age of twelve years she was baptized and andmitted to church communion by Rev. Samuel Houston, pastor of Highbridge and Falling Spring churches, Rockbridge county, Va.

She was married to Rev. Samuel Brown, pastor of the renowned New Providence church. Mr. Brown died very suddenly and she was left in widowhood, the mother of eleven children. Of the seven sons, five became ministers of the gospel, James, Samuel, Henry, Joseph and William. Mr. Brown's son-in-law became the successor of her husband in the pastoral charge of New Providence and is ever to be remembered as the comforter of her widowhood and the faithful and efficient guardian of her young children.

In the writer's opinion that few ministers ever lived and died in the service of the Virginia churches, more worthy of grateful remembrance than James Morrison.

The following is a brief account of the circumstances that attended Dr. Brown's licensure for the gospel ministry:

He had completed his studies and was at his mother's home the last few weeks of her life. Most of this time was passed by her in comparative freedom from intense suffering. Up to Friday, April 16, 1824, Mrs. Mary Moore Brown had cheerfully conversed with all visiting friends, but on the 18th, which was communion Sabbath at New Providence, she did not appear disposed to converse with anyone. It became apparent that in a few days at most, all would be over.

During the latter part of Tuesday night, the 20th, she seemed relieved of the difficulty of speaking, she also realized the end was just at hand.

For some weeks previously she was much interested in the ap-

proaching meeting of Lexington Presbytery, to convene at Mossy Creek, April 22nd, as it was anticipated that her son James, the "firstling of her flock", would be devoted to the gospel ministry. This manifestation of interest impressed her friends that her last wish, concerning earthly events, was to know that her son had taken up the ministerial gospel service. On Wednesday, soon after breakfast, she asked her son whether he was getting ready for Presbytery, knowing that it was important he should start that forenoon, to be in time for the meeting. He replied that as he did not think it right to leave her, he was not going.

She told him that it was her earnest wish that he should go. She might live to see him come back a preacher, but if she did not it would be much more of a satisfaction to her to know that he had gone to be licensed than have him stay with her. Before her son left for Presbytery in compliance with his mother's desire, Mrs. Brown had the servants called in and then the children, that she might take leave of them, speaking to each one some parting word of counsel or exhortation. She calmly and lovingly committed the four youngest of the children to Mr. and Mrs. James Morrison, who were to be in their mother's place when she was gone to be with Christ.

She implored God's blessing on all, and then seemed to realize there was nothing more to do but depart hence and be with the Lord.

On Friday afternoon, April 23rd, between three and four o'clock, her son, the subject of this sketch, was being licensed at Mossy Creek, forty miles direct from the home of his dying mother. He had heard nothing since leaving her on Wednesday morning, under the circumstances just referred to. Soon as possible after the Presbyterial exercises had concluded his licensure he started for home.

Up to midnight he heard nothing from her and so when he come near the New Providence grave yard, about that hour and riding up to the enclosure but a few yards from his father's grave, he saw that the ground had not been broken there for a new grave, and it was now certain that his mother was not dead on the morn-

ing of that day. There was now hope for the son, that he might find his mother yet alive. Three miles remained, and spurring his tired horse, the distance was soon passed over. It was a few minutes before one o'clock when he dropped the saddle bags off his arm in the hall and opened the door entering his mother's room.

At that moment it was found she could not speak, although she had spoken quite intelligently less than an hour previously.

Those at her side noticed that when the door was opened she turned her eyes that way and her gaze followed her son as he approached her bedside. In less than two hours after this her ransomed spirit passed away.

Where the saints of all ages in harmony meet,
Their Savior and brethren transported to greet,
While the anthems of rapture unceasingly roll,
And the smile of the Lord is the peace of the soul.

But one member of Dr. Brown's family is now living, the Rev. John C. Brown, of Lewisburg, W. Va.

His eminent services as pastor of Frankfort and Malden churches and stated clerk of Greenbrier Presbytery for a long series of years, show that he is a very worthy son of his illustrious father. As illustations of the grand results accomplished by his personal influence, let it be remembered that the eminent Stuart Robinson testifies that he owes more to Dr. Brown than any other man.

Professor Milton W. Humphries, of the Virginia University, reputed as one of the most eminent of living American scholars is a protege of Dr. Brown and his eldest son, Rev. Samuel H. Brown, a minister of brightest promise for usefulness at the time of his lamented death in 1857, while pastor of Frankfort church, Greenbrier county.

Though Dr. Brown's name has been familiar to me as a household word far back as I can remember any name, yet my personal acquaintance was limited.

I have in my portfolio brief sketches of this venerated minister as he appeared upon two occasions at meetings of the Greenbrier Prebytery, being the only personal recollection that I possess of him. These I prize highly, and ask a place for one of them in this biographic sketch.

August, 1853, Greenbrier Presbytery met at the French Creek Church, Upshur county, (now) West Virginia, though his home at Charleston was one of the most remote from the place of meeting, yet such was his punctuality in attending Presbytery that he was one of the very first to arrive.

He had made the entire journey on horseback, a distance of one hundred and thirty miles, and as he traveled he preached once and frequently twice a day.

With him it was a custom to have a series of appointments in advance on his excursions to church meetings. He rarely if ever, made any for his return, as he ever hoped there might be special manifestations of spiritual influences during the sessions, and he wished to remain, if so, and assist in the harvest of souls.

This long industrious journey was performed in very warm August days, and still he seemed a stranger to weariness either of body or mind. As the church was approached my traveling companion the late Rev. Enoch Thomas, to whom the Doctor was well known remarked, "it is just as I expected it would be, Dr. Brown is the first man here." Looking in the direction he pointed out, I saw Dr. Brown for the first time. At the moment he was conversing in an animated manner with a group of persons, afterwards ascertained to be the official members of the French Creek congregation.

Dr. Brown's presence was nobly picturesque. A long used pair of large full saddle bags over his left shoulder, while over his left arm was thrown his wrappers and linen duster, and with his left hand holding his umbrella for his support, leaving the right hand free for tokens of fellowship and greeting. Thus equipped, he passed leisurely from one group to another, having a kindly greeting for friend and stranger, seemingly alike. During the proceedings of the Presbytery, he was with the cordial consent of all *primus inter pares,* and in the course of all my subsequent ministerial observation I do not remember to have ever met anyone whose intercourse with brethren more pleasingly illustrated the apostolic precept "In honor preferring one another", as did his demeanor throughout the sessions.

Sabbath morning was all that one could wish for serene dream-like beauty. The newly painted church on the summit of a dome-like grassy hill, crested with a grove of young oaks, could be seen far and near by the throngs of worshippers approaching from all directions. It but rarely happens in mountain regions that such a gathering of people occurs as was that day. It was soon decided to be most expedient to conduct services under the shade of the trees. There was a grove near at hand that readily reminded one of the poet's beautiful words:

"The groves were God's first temples ere man learned
To hew the shaft and lay the architecture
And spread the roof above them in the darkling wood
Amid the cool and silence man knelt down
And offered to the Mightiest Solemn thanks
And supplications."

A stand was placed under a wide spreading tree and seats extemporized of logs, fence rails, boards and benches belonging to an old vacated church building not far away, while hundreds reclined on the green turf, others in wagons and carriages drawn up around the space occupied by those seated as indicated.

While these arrangements were busily preparing, Doctor Brown appeared coming alone from the retired part of the grove with his Bible and hymn book in hand.

I will not say that his face was transfigured, but it seemed to me there was something of more than earthly radiance beaming from his lustrious eyes, as he paused near where his son, the late Rev. Samuel H. Brown, and myself were reclining on the grass and thoughtfully surveyed the living scene before him.

When Doctor Brown perceived that all were in readiness for worship, he approached the stand with slow reverential step and with the utmost propriety of manner, took his place thereon, attended by the Rev. David H. Cunningham.

The contrast presented by the appearance of these ministers rivited my attention. Doctor Brown was the impersonation of manly vigor, Mr. Cunningham was that of premature discrepitude, wasted as he was by years of toil, by broken health and heaviness of

spirit. The sweet morning air toyed gently with his long silvery locks, thinly growing about his furrowed temples like the wrestling of unseen angelic wings pluming for flight, as he sat for a moment with closed eyes and bowed head.

He was invited to offer the invocation. Thereon he arose, reached forth his withered, trembling hands, and from lips pale as those of a speaking corpse, sweet and humble words were spoken to Him who has promised to help the assemblies of His saints. Dr. Brown then read the hymns and to this hour I seem to hear his reverential silvery tones repeating among others, these words:

"Come we that love the Lord,
And let your joys be known,
Join in a song of sweet accord,
And thus surround the throne."

"The hill of Zion yields
A thousand pleasant sweets,
Before we reach the heavenly fields,
Or walk the golden streets."

If my memory serves me rightly the text was this: "Thus saith Lord God I will yet for this be inquired of by the house of Israel, to do it for them I will increase them with men like a flock."—Eze. 36:37. The use and necessity of importunate prayer to fit us for present duties and future blessings was the preacher's theme, which he illustrated and enforced in a pleasing and impressive manner. It is not to my credit, however, to confess that I was viewing him with a critic's eye. I was just at that period when young men sometimes feel they could give older men very useful pointers about almost anything.

During the first part of the sermon I was not a little apprehensive, judging from my own impressions, the preacher in question would not be abe to sustain the deeply wrought feeling of the audience engendered by the hymns and one of the most importunate and earnest long prayers that I had ever heard. It was a fervent effectual prayer that availed so much as to dim hundreds of eyes with tears.

As the preacher proceeded in his discourse his manner seemed gradually less impassioned and his voice assumed a lower tone and his eyes less radiant with the nameless lustre already spoken of. I perceived my interest diminishing and an unusual apathy benumbing my emotions that had been so highly wrought upon. But when the speaker came to apply what he had established by this process of calm and unimpassioned reasoning, it seemed to me that I saw a tint of crimson flash across his brow. In an instant his voice assumed a tone that thrilled and penetrated the mind, and aroused the dormant emotions from their partial repose. His noble presence dilated, his form became more erect, if possible, his lip quivered and his eye flamed with a brightness more seraphic than at any time before.

All this revealed the pleasing fact, that the repose of his manner in the opening of the sermon was only the retrospection of the tide that was to return in due season with overwhelming power. When the refluent wave of feeling was highest the preacher turned his gaze not upward, but towards the eastern horizon, where distant mountains seemed to be meeting the bending skies with their sun-bright summits, then with a gesture as if he were gently and reverently drawing aside the veil that shuts heavenly scenes from earthly view, he referred to what is said of the beautiful city of light, scenes befitting heaven passed before the eye of the soul, as the preacher quoted the words of John wherein he tells us of what his eye had not seen, ere his banishment to the Isle of Patmos.

About the time we were feeling that the happiness of that great multitude with palms of victory was complete, and that nothing now remained to make heaven more like a realm of unspeakable joy than what he had thus represented to be, the preacher paused, let go the veil as it were, and turning to his hearers remarked that however happy heaven seemed, as just described, there were times when all in heaven were happier still. His great soul seemed fully woven into the question. O, when is it the bright celestial throngs tune their harps to nobler sweeter songs, and sublime anthems of praise be heard in the Father's house above? Many with melting

hearts and flowing tears heard the answer. It will be when some ministering angel shall bear the tidings home to heaven, there are wayward sons and daughters longing to have their sins forgiven. There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth for then the inquiry goes up to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ wilt thou be merciful to me, a sinner?

In sweet and tender words the speaker recounted the joys of pardoned sin. Doubts of God's willingness to forgive the sins of believing inquirers seemed to vanish like mists before the rising sun, as the preacher spoke of God's so loving the world, that He sent not His son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through him might be saved. And finally when the speaker pointed to the Lamb of God as he prayed on the cross, Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do, and we were reminded that these intercessory were for those who crowned him with thorns, who derided him with mocking words, and nailed him to the cross, we felt that it would be the very worst of sins to doubt a love like that, and all inquiries must be graciously answered and blessed.

It seemed to me as if my full heart could receive no more. That Sabbath is one of the precious pearls on my thread of life's memories. While hearing that sermon I realized the power of an eloquence, that nothing but the faith that works by love and purifies the heart, can inspire the faith that makes the pearly gates appear, and thus brings eternal glories near enough to make us realize a foretaste of what God has prepared for those who love Him.

At the conclusion of this sermon, the venerable Mr. Cunningham introduced the communion services, and I believe for the last time in his life led the devotions of his brethren in this solemn ordinance at any meeting of the Presbytery. With thankful hearts and filial boldness, we received the emblems of our Redeemer's love.

It pleased the Master of assemblies to manifest himself in the breaking of bread, of which blessing many were convinced by plain evidences of the Holy Spirit's presence and power. Dr. Brown remained and preached for a number of days, and as the result of

a series of meetings, forty or more conversions were reported, and a genuine quickening of religious interest throughout adjacent communities. WM. T. PRICE.

Marlinton, W. Va.

NOTES, QUERIES AND WANTS.

WANTED.

For the completion of its files of West Virginia Documents, the Library of Congress needs the following:

Journals of the House of Representatives 5th Session, 1867.

Journals of the Senate, 5th Session 1867.

Message of the Governor and accompanying Documents presented to the following sessions of the legislature, 3rd, 1865, 5th 1867, 17th 1883, 19th 1887, 20th 1889.

It is hoped that among the readers of this journal there may be some who owns these volumes and would be willing to part with them for the benefit of the National Library. Correspondence is invited by the Division of Documents, Library of Congress, Washington, D. C.

When was the court house of Cabell county taken to Barboursville?

In Frederick county, Va., about 1760, there was a Mr. Taylor married a Miss Hite, who subsequently removed west to Kentucky or elsewhere. Information of this family is desired.

Address, W. Va. His. Mag.,
Charleston, W. Va.

Vol. 3. APRIL, 1903. No. 2.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine Quarterly,

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year, - - - - - - - - - $1.00
SINGLE COPIES, - - - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

THE TRIBUNE PRINTING COMPANY,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS OF APRIL 1903.

Jost Hite, The Pioneer.....*W. S. Laidley.* 99
Elting and Shepherd Families of Md. and Va...*S. Gordon Smyth.* 119
Augusta Men in French and Indian War....*Jo. L. Miller, M. D.* 127
Cresap and Logan.....*M. Louise Stevenson.*
The National Road.....*G. L. Cranmer.*
Virginia Soldiers at Fort Pitt, 1783.....*O. S. Decker.*
Rev. John Clark Bayless.....*Lon K. Poage.*

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

JOST HITE

PIONEER OF SHENANDOAH VALLEY

1732.

The first settlement of the Valley of Virginia, marks the first settlement of West Virginia, and in order to comprehend the situation of this attempt to settle the country west of the Blue Ridge, it will be eminently proper to give an account of the times and people, interested in or affected thereby.

The English made their settlement on the coast of Virginia in 1607. And their purpose, they avow, was to extend the commerce of Great Britain, to find homes for the residents of their overcrowded cities, and to spread the Gospel among the heathen of Virginia.

As the settlement grew, the settlers became Virginians and the heathen were known as "Salvages" or Indians.

At the end of one hundred years, the Virginians knew little or nothing of the country except along the coast and on the rivers where they could go in ships and boats. They found more territory east of the mountains than they could well care for and protect, and much more than they then had any use for, and they had not deemed it prudent to go to or to attempt to investigate the country beyond the High mountains, and it was proven by Col. Wm. Byrd that in 1709 it was not known that the Potomac passed through the said mountains. There was no attempt to extend their missionary work beyond the vicinity in which they lived, and no doubt they

had all the work of that kind they could do, and the country and the people beyond the mountains were unknown to them.

In 1713 Governor Spottswood had found iron ore on the Rappahannock and afterwards established an iron furnace some where at a point which he called "Germania," because the men he imported to run the furnace and make the iron, were from Germany, brought over by Baron de Graffenreid in 1714.

In 1716, the Governor was moved to go on an expedition from his furnace town to the top of the mountain and see what was to be seen, and with quite a party he made the trip and even crossed the river he found on the west side, and was surprised to find it running north, and was lead to believe by the Indian reports that it emptied into the Great Lakes of the north.

This, with much else gathered from the report of the expedition, made by Fontaine, shows that they knew nothing whatever of the country on the west side of the mountain, and as far as is known, this is the first official report of any information on the subject.

In 1720, the Virginia Assembly stated in the preamble to an act establishing the County of Spottsylvania, that the frontiers towards the high mountains are exposed to danger from the Indians and the late settlements of the French to the westward of said mountains, and in the description of the boundary they speak of the river, but mention no name for it. This shows that they had no conception what ever of the country they were speaking of, and it will soon appear that as far as the country west of the mountains was concerned, they cared as little as they knew.

In 1722, there was an act of the Assembly passed—4 Hen. 103—entitled "An Act for enforcing and rendering more effectual the treaties already made and hereafter to be made with foreign Indians." This recites the treaty made at Albany with the five nations, by which it was agreed that the said Indians should not pass over the Potomac (which river was so called to the high mountains) nor should they come east of said mountains, and the tributary Indians were not to cross the Potomac to the north, nor go west of the said mountains—and all offenders were to be killed. This treaty shows that the entire country west of the Blue Ridge was abandoned to the foreign Indians, and tradition says that the Shenandoah Valley was inhabited by no Indians but was a hunting

ground and battle field for the northern and southern tribes of wild red men of the forest. We have it also, that about 1725, there started from some point in the north, for an excursion, a band of Indian warriors to the south to capture and kill all other Indians and especially those from the south. It seems that there was with this military excursion, a white man from New York, who was a trader with Indians and on friendly relations with them. What his purpose was in attending this foray we have not yet ascertained, but they crossed the Potomac in the Valley and proceeded to the south, and they had not gone many days up the "Euphrates" before they met with the heathen that they were searching for—the result of this unexpected meeting was a terrific battle and the southern heathen destroyed the bloodthirsty foreign Indians from the north and Mr. Van Meter had the pleasure of making his way back unaccompanied and alone, and no doubt without any others to hasten his exit, as there were probably but few left and none what ever to disturb him.

John Van Meter had taken time, either in going or returning, to notice the lay of the land, and his report was that it was the finest landed country he had ever seen, and his account of the scenery seems to have been made known and he retained it in his memory—it impressed him.

In 1727, the town of Fredericksburg was laid out into streets and lots and offered for sale and this old town began its existence. In this year the Assembly passed an act to help out the Germania and other iron-works, by directing roads and bridges to be built and exempting all persons from taxes that did work on the roads to and from said furnaces.

The territory of Virginia, as inhabited, was designated as "Necks"—strips of land between streams—"The Northern Neck," was that part of Virginia claimed by Lord Fairfax, and was described as lying between the Rappahannock and the Potomac. Lord Fairfax had agents in Virginia attending to this great estate while he was in England, attending to other matters, &c.

In 1728, the Indians within thirty miles from Philadelphia were committing depredations to the extent that the citizens petitioned the Governor for protection.

Such was the condition of the country, and of the people and of

the Indians. No settlement of any note on the Atlantic coast from Philadelphia to Williamsburg, Va., and the Indians roaming through the woods, searching for whom they might devour, and whose scalps they might carry away. The Shenandoah Valley, west of the Blue Ridge is a long distance from Philadelphia and from Williamsburg and for one to travel it on foot, through a wilderness of woods, it was a very long ways off, from civilization.

We do not intend to repeat any more than is necessary to make the situation plain, but on the 17th day of June, 1730, John and Isaac Van Meter visited Governor Gooch at Williamsburg and entered into a contract in relation to the settlement of that part of Virginia, beyond the mountains, on the Potomac and tributaries. The particulars of this contract are set forth in the April, 1902, number of this magazine, pages 16, 17, 18. The Van Meters were to locate forty families on the Shenandoah, and for so doing they were to have forty thousand acres of land, said location of said families to be made within two years. It appears that while these negotiations were before the Governor and his council, Robert Carter, Esq., agent for the proprietors of the Northern Neck, wished it entered of record that the land in consideration was that of Lord Fairfax, but the Governor and council proceeded to make the contract notwithstanding the proprietors claims.

Here is the first move to settle any part of the country west of the mountains. It has on its face a scheme for colonization, by the Dutch from New York and New Jersey on the one part, and to secure a large portion of the fairest land for themselves and their friends and relatives. And on the other part, it looks as if the Governor and council were anxious to secure between themselves and the foreign Indians and French, a living barrier of men upon whom the said savages might amuse themselves when in a desperate way, and which said barrier might, the best it could, keep back the hated French and allies. It was no missionary enterprise on the part of either, it was a land speculation on the part of the Dutchmen, and it was a military move on the part of the Virginians, a move to secure some one else to keep back the marauding Indians.

Let us here pause in this part of the story, and go to New York, up on the Hudson, at Kingston, New Palaz, &c., where there were

many people who had come from Holland and made a settlement many years before, where we will find the names of Van Meters, Dubois, Eltings and others. Turn to the January number, 1903, of this magazine and you will learn more of these people and their settlement.

Hans Jost Heydt was a German, and it is believed, was a Lutheran, but whether a Lutheran or German Reformed we cannot determine. He came from Strausburg, and landed in New York about 1710. He had a wife, whose maiden name was *Anna Maria DuBois,* and they brought with them their little girl, called Mary.

On their arrival in New York, they proceeded to the home of the friends of Mrs. Hite, and made their home in or near Kingston.

Anna Maria DuBois was a French woman, but evidently had been living in some part of the Netherlands and had acquired the Dutch language and customs and had become related to the people who had migrated to New York before she did. This assertion is based on the tradition of the family, that when Hans Jost Heydt, which being rendered into English, is John Joseph Hite, and Miss DuBois were first acquainted, they had some difficulty in making themselves understood; that his German and her Dutch were not at all alike—but it seems to have answered the purpose.

While Jost Hite (pronounced Yost Hite) as he was afterwards called, was in Kingston, there were born to him two other daughters, Elizabeth in 1711, and Magdalena in 1713.

In 1716 Hite and family were at Germantown, Penna., and in 1717 he was in the Perkeomen region on the Skuylkill. He seems to have bought and sold lands, established a mill at the mouth of the Perkeomen creek, which is just across the river from Valley Forge —and became a thrifty, enterprising busy manufacturer and farmer, and he was one of those that in 1728 signed a petition to the Governor of Penna. for protection against the marauding Indians.

He sold his holdings in this country in January, 1730, and the same now is owned by Gov. Pennypacker, of Penna. What Mr. Hite was doing from Jan. 1730, we do not know, but we do know that in June, 1730, the Van Meters went to Williamsburg, Va. and made the contract for 40,000 acres of land in the Shenandoah Valley.

It has been shown by Mr. S. Gordon Smyth, in the Jan. 1903,

number of this magazine, that the Van Meters, DuBois, Shepherds and Hite were related by marriage, &c., and perhaps there was communication between them.

At any rate on the 5th Aug., 1731, the Van Meters sold to Jost. Hite the contracts made with Governor Gooch of Va. No doubt that Hite was busy with the enterprise, as the Van Meter contract required him to locate his forty families in two years, and in all probability, after Hite knew of the Van Meter contract, he became interested and visited the land. In the meanwhile, he had secured the aid of one Robert McKoy, who was a friend, or Quaker, and on the 21st Oct. 1731, Hite and McKoy obtained an order of council for one hundred thousand acres on the west side of the mountains on the like conditions of settling one hundred families thereon within two years, the same kind of contract that Van Meter had made.

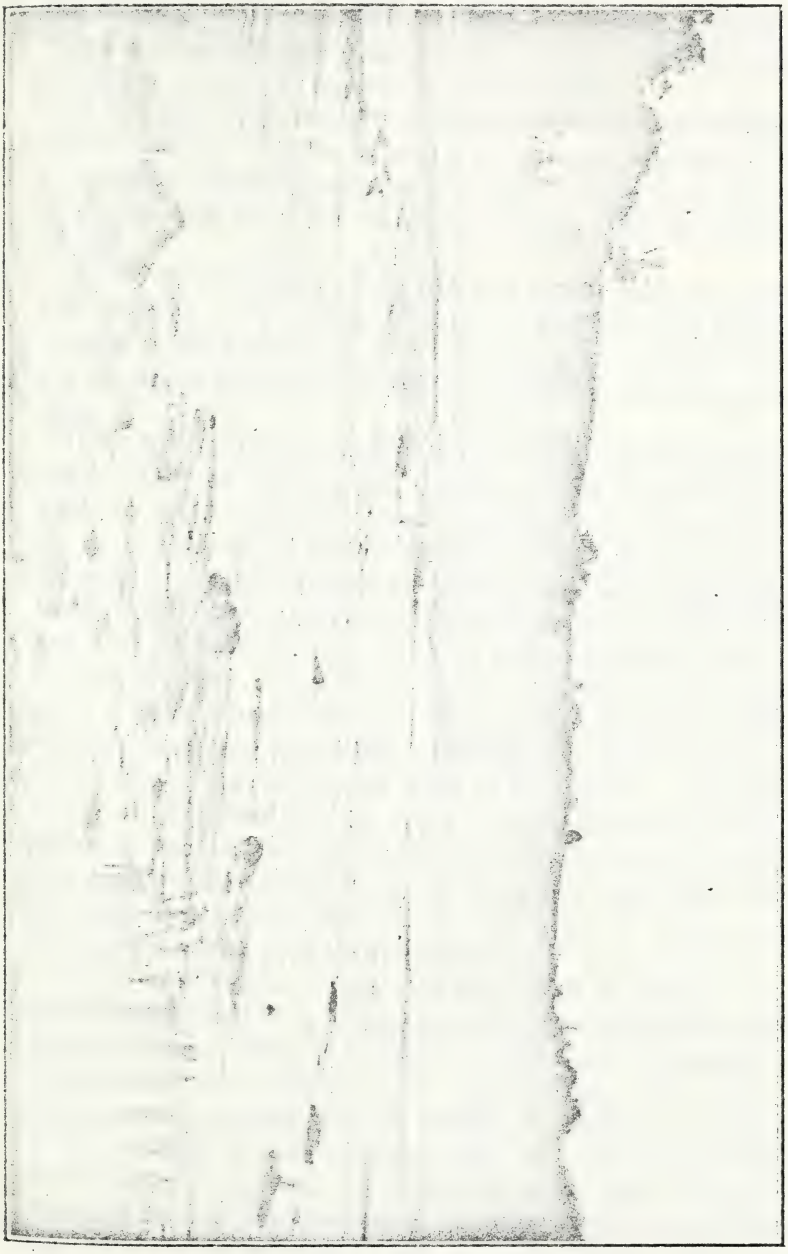
The time for making these settlements was extended until Christmas, 1735. The next we hear of the enterprise, we find Hite with sixteen families at Little York, Penna. early in the spring of 1732, and he, with his cavalcade, made their way through the wilderness to the Potomac, and crossed at the Ford, afterwards called the Pack Horse Ford, after Mecklenburg, and afterwards *Shepherdstown.*

Hite and his settlers seemed to have proceeded up the Valley and at first made a stop at a place called "Red-Bud," and afterwards Hite made his selection on the Opequon, called Springdale, and is now where the Valley pike crosses the Opequon, sometimes called Bartonsville.

These settlements were made early in 1732, and they were on the west side of the Shenandoah river, and hence were in no county of Virginia; the boundary of the county of Spottsylvania extended only to the said river, and the County of Orange, which it seems was contemplated, was not established until August 1734, but which did extend to the utmost limits of Virginia, towit: "from sea to sea"—when it was formed.

Hite and his associates went to work and prepared themselves houses and farms. Made surveys of land, and the county of Orange shows by its records, many deeds from Hite.

On the 12th June, 1734, an order of council was made, which stated that Jost Hite had made due proof that he had complied with the terms of the grants made to the two Van Meters and had set-



PACK HORSE FORD.

tled on those lands more than the requisite number of families, directed that patents should issue to him and his assignees, upon the surveys then returned into the Secretarys office.

In this year 1734, began the litigation between Lord Fairfax and Hite and others. Fairfax entered a *general caveat against* all orders of councils, deeds, patents, entries, &c., issuing from the crown office, for lands lying within his proprietary, until the dispute was settled.

By the 1st of January, 1736, Hite and McKoy had procured fifty-four families, on their 100,000 acres of land and had made some surveys, which were returned into the Secretary's office in due time, but the *caveat* was served before the patents were issued on the surveys.

In 1736, Lord Fairfax arrived with royal instructions and in that year and the succeeding year, a survey of the Northern Neck was made, by which it appeared that a large part of the contested lands lay in the bounds of the proprietary, which gave rise to certain petitions before the Governor and council, who confirmed the survey on the terms that Lord Fairfax should establish all the grants which had been made by the crown, and an order was made to that effect on Dec. 21, 1738. In consequence of which his lordship promised deeds to the grantees under the crown and particularly to Hite and his associates, who threatened, otherwise, to abandon their settlements and to remove to other parts of the country, which promise was to be performed as soon as his office for purposes of this kind should be opened, and thereupon Hite withdrew his 27 surveys and fees from the office of the Secretary, in order to lodge them with the proprietor for patents, and the surveys were so lodged and the claimants went on with their improvements on the lands.

After Lord Fairfax opened his land office he refused to make grants to Hite and his associates, and conveyed part of the lands to sundry persons. Hite and associates filed their bill against Lord Fairfax and those claiming under him, setting forth the above circumstances, praying that his lordship be decreed to make deeds to the plaintiffs for the surveyed lands, &c. The defendants filed their answers. On 13th Oct., 1769, the court made a decree that Hite and McKoy were entitled to the land surveyed before Christmas 1735 for which patents had not issued before 11th August,

1745, and that Lord Fairfax ought to issue deeds for said lands and appoint a commissioner to examine and state a memorial of all such surveys claimed by plaintiffs—that his lordship deliver to the said commissioners all the original surveys lodged in his office by Robert Green, gent. decd.

Thos. Marshall and others, comrs., reported twenty-seven surveys containing 37,834 acres and Fairfax produced a list of patents from the Secretarys office for 47,278 acres showing that the Van Meters orders were satisfied, with an excess.

In 1771 there was a final decree, which gave to Hite the 40,000 acres Van Meter land, and to Hite and McCoy 54,000 acres of the 100,000 acres mentioned in order of 21st Oct. 1731.

Lord Fairfax appealed to the King in council, but never prosecuted the same. Hite and others appealed from parts of the decree as confirmed grants made by Fairfax since the commencement of the suit, this went to the Court of Appeals of Va. In the meanwhile Fairfax died in 1781. Gabriel Jones was one of the Exrs. of Lord Fairfax. Randolph argued the case in Appellate Court for Hite et als. Baker for appellees. John Taylor for Hite et als. Marshall for tenants. The appellate court gave Hite all he claimed with rents of the lands from Jany. forty-nine-fifty, and costs. We have given more space to this controversy between the old pioneers and Thomas Lord Fairfax because of the characters of the parties, the character of the suits, and the circumstances of the case.

The Governor and council knew or should have known, whether they had title to the land they sold to the settlers, and if they did know it, they should have required the settlement to have been located on land the title to which was unquestioned.

Lord Fairfax who had more land than he know what to do with, should not have promised to make good the contract which had been made with Hite and McKoy, unless he intended to execute it, and the word of one so pretentious, should have been as good as his bond. Fairfax was a royal pet (see Jan. 1902 number of this magazine) and he was as much interested in having that part of the country settled as was the Governor and council, and it was almost as daring, on the part of Hite, to enter this suit against Fairfax, as it was to go into this wilderness to settle, for the influence of Lord Fairfax, with the Colonial Government and the King of England

was probably as great as any other man or woman. Nevertheless the suit was commenced and founght to a finish, but the times had changed, and the influence of royal pets had ceased, and the courts became courts beyond royal favor. One other reason for giving the particulars of this cause is that for some cause, there seems to have been a want of information on the subject by the people, and an intimation that Fairfax had been wronged of his land, which is incorrect. For further particulars see Hite and others against Fairfax and others, 4 Call. Va. Reports 42-83.

There was besides Robert McKoy, interested in the one hundred thousand acre purchase, Robert Green and William Duff, but the extent of their interests we have not been able to ascertain or when and how they became interested.

HITES FAMILY.

Kercheval says that Hite with his family and sixteen others, cut their way from Little York, Penna. in 1732.

Hite had with him, his wife Anna Maria, his three daughters, and their husbands, towit: Mary and George Bowman, Elizabeth and Paul Froman, and Magdalena and Jacob Chrisman. And there were also four sons, to-wit: John Hite, Jacob Hite, Isaac Hite, Abraham Hite and Joseph Hite.

The names of the other families that accompanied him, are not stated definitely by any authority we have seen. Robert McKoy and Peter Stephens were with them. Geo. Bowman was evidently a German, and he settled not far from where Hite settled, which latter place was known as Springdale, now known as Bartonsville and is about five miles above Winchester. Bowman built a substantial house and remained there all his life. He raised a large family, several of whom were soldiers of rank and importance; one was with Genl. G. R. Clarke in the Illinois campaign, one was Col. of the 8th Va. German Reg. in the Revolution, and there were others that lived to be men of high standing, some of whom settled in Kentucky. We cannot forbear to mention Mrs. Eleanor Bowman, who still lives near Strausburg, Va., who was a Miss Hite of Berkeley Co., Va., when she married Mr. Bowman. She is over ninety years of age, and her daughter married J. S. Davidson, who was a descendant of Isaac Hite.

The first white child born in the valley was John George Bowman whose birth day was Apl. 27, 1732, and the next was Sarah Froman, Nov. 16, 1732. If there were any previous to this, it is not known.

Paul Froman was a Friend, one of the Philadelphia Quakers, who had married Elizabeth Hite and went with Hite into the wilderness. He settled near Springdale, but subsequently removed to Kentucky and his sons became prominent in the establishment of this new commonwealth.

Jacob Chrisman was a German from Swabia, and he settled at Chrisman Spring near Springdale. He lived and died at his first home in the valley and his descendants were numerous, especially in the upper valley, not far from Harrisonburg, and a cemetery at New Erection Church, has many monuments to the family name, and the celebrated Massanutta Springs belonged to one of the descendants.

John Hite was the oldest son, he was educated to some extent, wrote an excellent hand, was a business man, became Colonel of the Frederick Militia, President of the Court Martial of that County, was a member of the County Court, was a vestry man of his parish, and took a great interest in the general welfare of the country and was prominent in all public affairs. He went to Maryland and married Sara Eltings, a daughter of Cornelius Eltings, a wealthy land owner who had come from Kingston, N. Y.

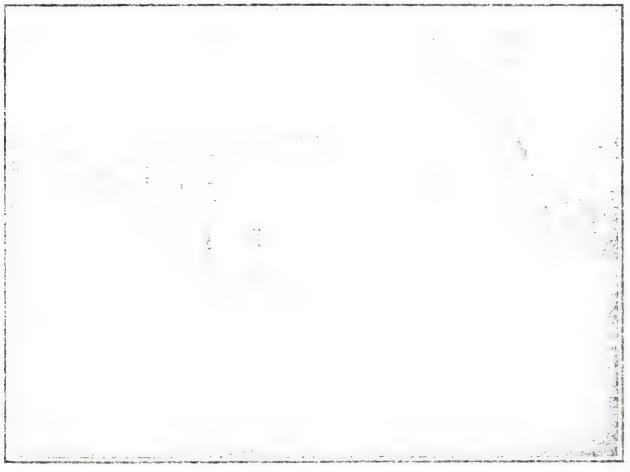
Col. John remained at Springdale, he built his barn in 1747, and his house which yet remains, in 1753. This place is where the valley pike crosses the Opequon, a mile or so north of Stephens City. He died about 1792. His oldest daughter, Rebecca, married Maj. Charles Smith, who afterwards owned the land where Berryville now stands and part of his farm was after his death in 1776, conveyed to Daniel Morgan. Another daughter of Col. John Hite, Margaret Isaac Brown, who is mentioned on page 59 of Jan. 1903 number of this magazine.

Another daughter, Elizabeth, married Maj. Hughes, who came with Braddock. After his death she again married Rev. Elijah Phelps, one of the first Methodist ministers of the valley, and they both are buried in the church yard at Stephens City, where the first Methodist church was erected in the valley and was built by Elizabeth Hughes and her brother, John Hite, Jr.

COL. JOHN HITE'S HOUSE 1753.

John Hite, Jr., was the only son of Col. John Hite. He built the largest and best mill that was in the valley at that day, 1788, and the same is yet running at Springdale. John, Jr., married Susanna Smith and afterwards married Cornelia Reagan, and moved to Rockingham county, near the Massanutta Spring. He had twenty children and a goodly heritage, and his descendants all went to the west as they grew up, some or whom settled on the Ohio river near Guyandotte.

Jacob Hite, the second son of Jost Hite, was an active, energetic impulsive man. He was engaged with his father in securing emi-

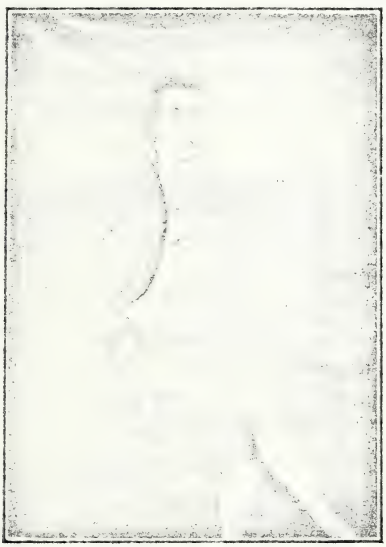


OLD MILL—1788.

grants to the valley and they had ships of their own, as will appear by Jacobs will recorded in Berkely Co., and on one of his trips, while in Dublin, he married Cathrine O'Bannon, and after her death, he married Mrs. Francis Madison Beale the widow of Tavener Beale, nee Francis Madison.

Jacob lived at Hopewell, near Leetown; he sold to Genl. Chas. Lee, and removed to South Carolina before the Revolution, taking with him a part of his family. While there, the Indians, who had been friendly to him, were instigated by the English, massacred him and his entire family, except one or two small children and a few colored servants. The servants were recovered but no news was ever heard of the chilldren.

Of his children that did not attend him to S. C. there were John Hite, Jr., who died in 1777. Thomas Hite who married Miss Beale; he was in the House of Burgesses and left a large family. Mary Hite, married Rev. Mr. Manning. Elizabeth Hite who married Col. Tavener Beale, Jr. George Hite, who was at William and Mary was in the cavalry service in Revolution, known as Capt. Hite, married Deborah Rutherford, was the first clerk of Jefferson Co., 1801, till his death in 1817, when he was succeeded by Maj. Robert G. Hite his son. Maj. Robert was a graduate of West Point, married Miss Briscoe, was clerk until his death in 1823. His sister, Sally,



MAJ. ISAAC HITE.

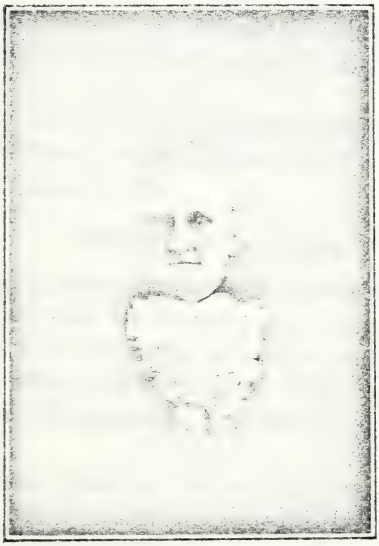
married R. B. Beckwith, the father of Judge Beckwith, and another sister, Susan, married T. R. Flagg, the father of Capt. Geo. Flagg, decd.

The descendants of Thos. Hite were numerous, and they did much for the good of the county in which they lived. The Misses Willis of Charlestown, and Miss Julia Grove of Shepherdstown are representatives of this branch.

Isaac Hite, the third son of Jost, was born 1723, in 1740 built his house at Long Meadows, and it is supposed his father lived with

him. He married Eleanor Eltings in 1745 a sister of Mrs. John Hite, and they raised a large and interesting family, an account of which has been published. He died in 1795. Their only son Isaac, afterwards known as Maj. Isaac Hite, was in the Revolution and was present at the surrender at Yorktown. He built what was called "Belle Grove" and lived there in more than usual style and comfort, being quite wealthy and popular. His first wife was Nelly C. Madison, and his last wife, Ann T. Massey.

Abraham Hite, the fourth son, married Rebecca Van Meter, and lived on the South Branch of the Potomac, in the Van Meter vicinity, near Moorfield. His sons, Abraham and Isaac, were among the first settlers in Kentucky and the parents in their old age removed there also. Abraham Hite was a man of wealth and influence, was a member of the House of Burgesses and aided in the struggle for independence.



A TYPICAL HITE—MRS. A. C. HOLDERBY, GUYANDOTTE, W. VA.

Joseph Hite, the youngest son, married Elizabeth — and lived until 1757-8 and left Joseph, John, William and Ann. They also went west and settled in Kentucky.

It is not our purpose to attempt to write the Hite family, this we reserve for a book, where they can all appear and all the particulars which would be interesting only to the family.

INDIANS.

Strange as it may appear, the Indians did not disturb Hite and his associates; they passed and repassed through the country but no settler was molested. Who can explain this? This peaceful attitude continued until 1753 when an emissary from the west came among the Indians in the valley and in the spring of 1754 there was not an Indian to be found, all had quietly departed to the west of the Alleghanies and joined the Indians on the Ohio and the French.

After the fall of Fort Necessity, the Indians became troublesome and on the retreat of Braddock's defeated army, the Indians followed with the settlements on the Potomac, and were soon afterwards hunting about, always ready to kill and burn, and their presence and disposition made the construction of Fort London, at Winchester, an immediate necessity.

There were many of the late settlers from Virginia that returned east of the mountains, but the early settlers stood by their guns, built houses that could not be burned and that could stand against bullets. Frequently the settlers had to fly for refuge to some such fort.

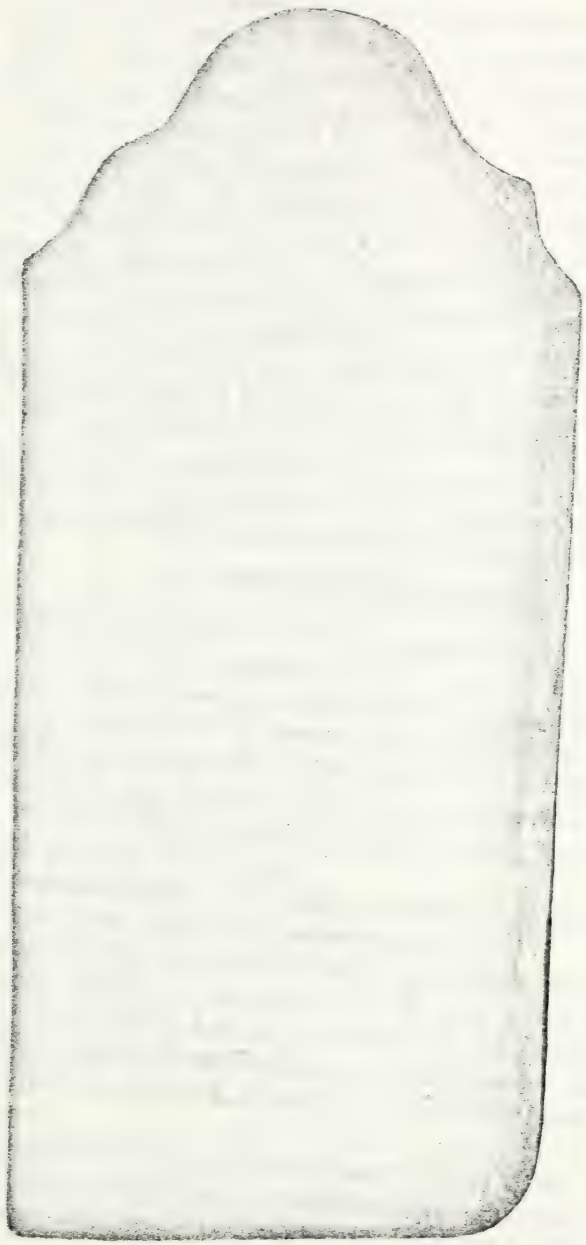
This continued, more or less, until about 1766-1767. Are not the chronicles of Withers border warfare full of it? and does not Kercheval relate enough of it?

PRE-HISTORIC SETTLERS

There have been attempts made to create the impression that prior to 1732, there were settlers and settlements in the valley near the Potomac and we read of the mysterious German mechanics and others that came some time from some where and had a settlement which they called Mecklenburg; the names and dates can not be secured.

Dr. John P. Hale after his visit to this section gave to the Historical Society a report in which he stated all the arguments and reasons and supposition that he had heard or could secure to convince his readers that there must be something in the claim.

All of these were taken up, in the next years report to said Society, and Dr. Hale was compelled to admit that most of his arguments were not convincing, but he continued to hold on to one circumstance, which he believed in. This was the tomb stone found



CATARINA BEIERLIN.

in the Rosemons grave yard near Shepherdstown, which he claimed showed the death of a German woman, Catarina Biererland, in 1707. This stone he secured and had brought to the Historical Society rooms in Charleston, and the same is there now.

The stone does not say 1707, and the proposition is a wild one on its face. What the stone did say, we cannot now tell, but it was probably 1767. There were no people in this country known prior to 1732, and not one single word of evidence can be produced to show it. Had there been a German settlement on the Potomac at Mecklenburg, would not Hite and associates have known it, would not Washington have known it when he was surveying for Fairfax, would not there have been soldiers there to help out when soldiers were wanted, would there not have been some thing to show it?

We know that the land was obtained from Hite by Thomas Shepherd and others, and Thomas Shepherd was the founder of the town. There was nothing public known that Kercheval did not know and what he knew he wrote and he says Hite was the first.

GROWTH OF THE COUNTRY.

Thomas Shepherd in 1734 took patents for lands on the Potomac. He had an eye for business, and knew a good thing when he saw it. He knew that at this point the inhabitants must come to cross the river, no matter which direction they might wish to go, and the trails for ages led to this point—the Ford. Yet the town did not grow rapidly, for it was in 1762 that it was made a town by land, and it was in that year that he began selling lots and placed on record his map of the place.

Winchester began about 1738, at least it has been said that in that year there were three houses there.

Stephens City, then called Newtown, was about the same age and probably had about the same growth, and was a rival for the county seat when it had to be determined and had the help of his lordship, Thomas Lord Fairfax, who was angered when the court determined in favor of Frederick Town, afterwards called Winchester.

Charlestown is supposed to have begun about 1760.

There was a church built in 1740 by Morgan Morgan. Dr. Briscoe and Jacob Hite on Mill Creek of the Opequon. Afterwards there

was a church built on the Opequon above Winchester, known as the Opequon church, which was in a Presbyterian settlement.

There is the ruins of an old church near Charlestown of which no one can give the history, and there seems to be some mystery connected with it. It is called St. Georges Chapel.

Washington first came before the public by his arrival in this part of the country, as a surveyor, when he was but sixteen years of age in 1748.

Washington was born about the time that Hite was preparing to make his exit from Little York, and to start on his march to the promised land in the Shenandoah.

Washington was but a boy when he first came in 1748, and his record shows he made his headquarters with Capt. John Hite. In 1753 Washington again passed through on his way to the Ohio with his notice to serve on the French official, at the junction of the rivers, afterwards known as Fort du Quesne, now Pittsburg. Again in 1754, Washington went with an army, part of which he obtained in Frederick county, to dislodge the French, and was glad to give up Fort Necessity and get back alive. And in 1755 he went again with Genl. Braddock and afterwards was sent to Winchester to erect Fort London and to protect the people.

He was a candidate for the House of Burgess in this county in 1757, but was defeated. Then in 1758 he was elected. There is a record of the vote printed in the Jan 1901, page 58-60 number of this magazine and the names of the Hites are found recorded for Washington, and from many acts of kindness, he showed himself a friend of the family.

The growth of the country was rapid. One reason for this was that Hite had only a limited time to settle his one hundred and forty (140) families in the land in order to secure the title to the land. This made his efforts in this behalf energetic and successful, and this also advertised the country and there seems to have been a rush for good and cheap land on which to settle.

In 1758 there were 443 voters, the names of whom are given in the Jan. 1901 number of this magazine. There were 40 grantees of Hite lands in 1734. From 1736 to 1744 there were 45 deeds of said land recorded in Orange Co. From 1748 to 1750 there were 90 Fairfax surveys made. It looks as if there had been a real estate boom..

OBIT.

Jost Hite had seen the result of wars in Germany, had seen the French and Indian wars in his new home, he had seen the wilderness made to blossom as a rose, he had seen Frederick county organized and the courts established, business had grown and the county with it. He lost his wife in the year of 1739 or '40. His sons and daughters had married and had homes and families of their own. The vicinity in which he lived had many German families, and he had German associations in his old age. He has been called "the old German Baron," he had lived a long while, the exact age is not known, but must have been between seventy-five and eighty. In 1757-8 he made his will and in 1760 he died.

While in life he gave his sons-in-law lands in Frederick and in Augusta; by his will he gave his estate to his four sons and the children of his son Joseph. His personal estate was not large, but in the appraisers list, there are mentioned seventeen Dutch books.

He must have been a man of more than ordinary talent, with good judgment, decided character and great energy. He left a war-ruined, starving country and by observation and tact improved his opportunities with each move he made. What he brought with him, we know not, but when he entered the valley he was a man of means and his investment was a good one. He obtained 40,000 acres by the Van Meter contract, and he and others obtained 54,000 of the 100,000 acres which he and McKoy contracted for. He risked his all, he endured much, but with his judgment, his energy, and perseverance, he made a success of his colonization scheme: he became wealthy, his family independent and respected—and, he died.

There may not be much in any life, it is a record generally of "born, married and died." The struggles and worries of a life time may not be compensated by all that is acquired, and that life is not worth living with the more successful, but we have here given a sketch of one whose work was not a small one, and few would have undertaken it and few of those, would have succeeded so well.

The counties of Berkeley and Jefferson of West Virginia, and that of Frederick of Virginia, presents a choice spot on the earths surface, and the same has been called the garden of the world. To Jost Hite we are indebted for its settlement, for its arrest from

"the heathen of Virginia"—for its occupancy by thrifty Germans and others he induced to come and help him hold it. Friends, Presbyterian Scotch-Irish, and Irish not Scotch, and English from every colony and country from which they could be secured—to all and to each, we are indebted for the invasion of 1732.

NOTES RELATING TO THE ELTING AND SHEPHERD FAMILIES OF MARYLAND AND VIRGINIA.

Prior to 1748 that part of the Province of Maryland lying west and south of what are now Baltimore and Carroll counties, and extending far into the altitudes of the Alleghany mountains, formed the extensive territory of Prince Georges county, out of which has since been carved the District of Columbia and the populous counties of Frederick, Montgomery, Carroll, Washington, Garrett and Alleghany; leaving however, a considerable area retaining the parent name. Nearly all these have the Potomac river for their southerly limit, beyond which lies the State of Virginia.

The Blue Ridge whose impenetrable fastnesses formed the frontier line in colonial days and marking, for the time—the limitations of early settlements—separate the present counties of Frederick and Washington, and intersect the Potomac where the historic town of Harper's Ferry sits enthroned amid her majestic surroundings, just within the wonderfully picturesque gateway to the Valley of Virginia. Here lay the parting of the ways: the one leading along the Shenandoah, and further west,—along the south branch of the Potomac,—to the farther south; and the other, by the waters of the upper Potomac at Cumberland, and by Wills' Creek, or other routes— to the headwaters of the streams emptying into the Ohio; and so on to the Mississippi and the seemingly illimitable west.

The head-springs of many of the water-ways of western Maryland: such as the Antietam, Conococheaque, Monocacy, Catoctin, Rock Creek and others tributary to the Potomac, rise in the highlands of Pennsylvania, at this time within Chester—afterward: Lancaster Co., but now in part comprising York, Adams, Cumberland and Franklin counties; that region forming the water-shed east of the Blue Ridge between the Susquehanna on the north and the Potomac on the south.

Each important stream in those times, marked the Indian's trail. Along its banks generations of redmen had passed north and south in peaceful intercourse, or, until trodden as war-paths in inter-tribal feuds, or, as the battle-ground of contesting races, yet always and under whatever condition, remaining the primal course into which the overflowing tide of emigration poured from the eastern provinces toward the empire of the south and west, and so became the first highways into that mysterious wilderness; and over them the pioneer pushed unawed by fearsome danger and undaunted by the stealthy foe,—though sometimes checked—until his final supremacy in possessing a freeman's home in a liberty-giving land.

In the first decade of the eighteenth century stray colonists from the north made their southward journey over these forest-stream paths and continued unremitting and unceasingly until every ford, ferry and confluence along the trail, had its little village, thus marking the beginning of the triumphal progress of our imperial civilization. At first a trader's cabin gathering to itself drifting settlers, formed the nucleus of such communities, where composite racial elements mingled in that equality of personal civil and religious liberty so long denied them in their native land. English, German, Irish, Scotch, French and Welch; Lutheran, Baptist, Episcopalian, Quaker and Presbyterian, living together in accord, yet, for the time, more firmly welded by the common interest of protection against the red foeman of the frontier. Such then, was the composition of the early settlements of the whites in Western Maryland.

The rich well-watered little valleys skirting the base of the low mountain ranges attracted the first settlers: although the Swedes and Dutch long before had ventured upon their trading expeditions to these parts; they dealt in peltries and had not stayed to claim the soil.

Extensive grants of land were first obtained along those smaller water-ways and finally extended to the shores of the Potomac.

Prince George's County seems first to have been the objective point of two migrating movements, both approaching it contemporaneously by different routes. One came down along the foothills of the Blue mountains from York ("little" York, as it was then called), Hanover, Lancaster and other overland points in

Pennsylvania reached by the German, Huguenot and Scotch-Irish pioneers who had gathered in these localities from Philadelphia, New York and the east. The other movement consisted mostly of English people from the older settlements in the tide-water counties of Virginia, lower Maryland and the southern portion of West Jersey. These advanced by way of Chesapeake thence up the Potomac, Patuxent and Patapscoe toward the South mountain where the human tides met and blended, then pushing through the gap at Harper's Ferry, began possessing the almost boundless virgin lands beyond.

Along the Monocacy and its vicinity, settlements were begun at a very early period; and after 1723 the valley was known to contain numerous colonists. They were principally the younger generation of the original planters of the Dutch towns along the upper Hudson in Ulster Co., N. Y., and others were from the mixed communities in the Province of East Jersey, more particularly, those lying near the shores of New York Bay. It is known that at a very early date many inhabitants from the vicinity of the Rariton and the Passaic rivers in East Jersey, moved westerly to the foot of the Kittaning range in Sussex county, N. J., from whence they later crossed the Delaware into Bucks—now Northampton county, Pa., locating in the Minisink country where they formed settlements about "the forks of the Delaware." From this region they passed along the foot of the Blue Ridge toward the Susquehanna. At Harris' Ferry and other crossings, they struck the principal trails leading in to Maryland.

In 1755-56 the entire chain of settlements in the vicinity of Easton and southward of it, was ravaged and burnt to the ground until the whole Minisink country was devastated and made desolate, by Leedyuscang, the chief of the Lenapes. Many of the settlers who escaped this barbarism fled toward Maryland and joined her population.

John Van Meter, of New York, who prior to 1730 had been a successful trader and enjoying friendly relation with, if not strong influence over—the Indian tribes on the southern trail,—and Jost Hite, his brother-in-law, are supposed to have been for a time in the Monocacy Valley before finally settling in the colony of Va., where they opened up the Opequon region for settlement in 1732-34.

Among the families who accompanied them was one that remained in Maryland after Van Meter and Hite passed over into Virginia, this was Cornelius Elting, a relative of both and a native of New York. In 1732 Elting obtained an extensive grant of land on the Potomac, near Whites' Ferry, to which he gave the name of "Abraham's Lot." A few years later he added another tract of 325 acres naming it "Eltings' Right." I think there was still another which was located at Broad Run, in the Catoctin Valley; and on one of the streams he built a mill which continued to be in use long after he and his son Isaac had passed away. It was a noted landmark during the Revolution and was known as Elting's Mill.

These Maryland Eltings were descendants of Jan Eltyge or Elten, of Dreuthe in the Netherlands; a son of Roeloffe Elten and Stryker Lebring. Jan was first at Flatbush, L. I., but later removed to Kingston in Ulster county, N. Y., where he married about 1677 Jacomynte Slecht. Their children were: I. Roeloff, b. 27 Oct. 1678; m. 13th June, 1703, Sarah Dubois, dau. of Abraham Dubois, the son of Louis, one of the Patentees of New Paltz. Issue: Johannes, b. 3 Sept., 1704; Jacomyntje, b. 7th March, 1706. Johannes m. 15 Nov. 1730, Rachael Wittiken.

II. Cornelius, (afterwards of Maryland), b. 29 Dec. 1681; m. Rebecca Van Meteren, 3d Sept. 1704. He d. in 1754, and she d. in 1756. Issue: Cornelius, b. 18 Aug. 1706, d. 7. 1. Isaac, b. 24 Oct. 1708, d. (in Md.) without issue, 1756. 3. Cornelius (of Va.), b. 10 Nov. 1710. 4. Jacomyntje, b. 27 July 1712; m. — Thompson, and had William, Cornelius, John and Ann, who m. — McDonald. 5. Zara, b. 6 Febr. 1715; m. John Hite, eldest son of Jost Hite. 6. Ezechiel, b. 16 June, 1717; 7. Elizabeth, b. 30 Aug. 1719; m. Abraham Ferrel, who settled in Pequa, Lancaster Co., Pa., and had: Cornelius (of Va.), Israel, Rebecca, who m. David Shriver of noted Maryland family, Elizabeth and Mary. 8. Alida (or Helita), b. 3d May, 1724, (sup.) m. Isaac Hite, another son of Jost Hite and 9. Gideon, b. 13th Oct. 1728.

III. William b. 19 Jan. 1685; m. Jannetjen Lesier, and had: Elsjen, b. 9 Sept. 1711.

Aaltje and Geertje were two (sup.) children of Jan and Jacomyntje Elting. They were m. at Kingston in 1695 and 1699, respectively.

Cornelius Elting, his wife Rebecca and their son Isaac, died in Frederick Co., Md. Their respective wills were probated there; the parents in 1754 and 1756, and Isaacs' in 1756, also. At that time there was said to be serious mortality among the male members of the family and of others, in consequence of a malignant fever which was epidemic through the Potomac valley.

The Monocacy valley seems to have included among its early population representatives of races and creeds other than the Dutch who came mostly from New York State. Janney, in his History of Friends, speaking of the emigration of many Quakers from Salem, N. J. and vicinity, and others from Nottingham, Pa. (now in Cecil Co., Md.) to the Monocacy about 1725, says they afterward established Cold Spring Meeting in 1736. In 1732 however, some Quakers from Pennsylvania, New Jersey and from Elk River in Maryland, under Alexander Ross, crossed the Potomac into the Valley of Virginia and established Hopewell Meeting at Opequon about 1735. Hopewell Meeting was undoubtedly so called from Hopewell in Salem Co., N. J. That eminent minister among Friends—Thomas Chalkley, visited the Friends residing in the two settlements in 1738 and gave them some wholesome advice in relation to their encroachments upon the Indians' land west of the mountains.

Weeks, in his "Southern Quakers and Slavery," states that Friends from Salem, N. J., settled in the upper part of Prince Georges' county, Md., in 1723, and goes on to relate how the wave of emigration passed on down the Virginia valley to the Carolinas and farther south during the next succeeding few years.

When we come to analyse the "make up" of the Monocacy settlements one finds groups of family names identical with those peculiar to certain localities in New York and New Jersey, and appear as though they might have been transported bodily from one point to the other. Scattered through the "hundreds" of Prince Georges county, and in close proximity to each other are found the families of Morgan, Nevil, Hardin, Hedges, Johnsons, Bacon, Vance, Wright, Watson, Woods, Zanes, Rumsey, Evans, Lucas and Shepherd—all of which may be found at a prior date in Salem Co., N. J., particularly along the Cohansey river where there was a numerous colony including such names from 1690 to 1715.

From Monmouth county came the Foreman, Hodge, Crawford, Stockton and other families whose names became familiar in the vicinity of Winchester, Va., and farther down the valley. Benjamin Burden, the great proprietor of the Northern Neck went direct from Middlesex Co. to his vast possessions in the valley and Cornelius Wyncoop was a settler from Bergen Co., N. J.

Those living in Salem Co., N. J., migrating south had only to cross the Delaware river to be in New Castle Co., Pa. (now in the State of Delaware); moving onward over the narrow neck that separates the Delaware from the Chesapeake, to the head of Elk river, there, joined by the Wests, Swearingens and others, proceed down the bay, or overland to Western Maryland and the upper Potomac country.

We begin to get trace of Jerseymen in St. John's Parish, then comprising a vast territory lying beyond the Eastern Shore settlements. Among the twenty-seven persons who assembled at Rock Creek, 8th September, 1719, to select a site and erect a chapel for the parish, were L. Morgan, Walter and Philip Evans, Thomas Lucas, Isaac and John Hardin. This parish was divided in 1726 and the region beyond the eastern branch of the Potomac, including Rock Creek and Potomac Hundreds retained the old title, while all the territory co-extensive with Prince George's county and reaching to the western frontier was given the same name as the county. The Rev. George Murdock was chosen its first pastor, 29th December, 1726.

At a meeting of the Freeholders (an official term in use in South New Jersey to the present day) of the upper part of the parish, held in February 1728, a petition was prepared asking permission of the Governor and Council to fix a site for a new church. The petition was granted, and among the names of subscribers to a fund for building the new chapel in the western part of the county were those of Thomas and William Shepherd. After this date no further reference is found respecting Thomas Shepherd in that county, and the inference is, that he had been living in the upper part of the county and afterward crossed the Potomac at the mouth of the Antietam, into Virginia, where he established his Lares and Penates on the opposite shore, at Mecklenburg, now known as Shepherdstown which he subsequently organized. William Shepherd,

his supposed brother, and William Shepherd, Jr., remained in Maryland, and were among other petitioners who about 1740 applied for a division of Prince Georges' Parish and the creation of a new one to be called All Saints Parish that was to extend northward from the Great Seneca creek, &c.

There appear to have been two distinct families of the Shepherds who located near each other in Western Maryland. Thomas and William Shepherd, whom I have mentioned, came, let us say: from 1720 to 1725, or, about the time Janney and Weeks fix upon as the date of the arrival of the first colonists from New Jersey. They located in the vicinity of Rock creek, perhaps nearer the Monocacy. Solomon Shepherd was the head of the other family that did not reach that part of Maryland till about 1779. He was the eldest son of William and Richmundy Shepherd, Irish Friends and members of Menallin Meeting in York Co., Pa. Solomon married Susanna Farquhar. They came down from York Co., and settled near Union Bridge, in Carroll county, where their descendants are now numerous. These two families were apparently in no way related to each other.

The trend of evidence points to the conclusion that Thomas and William Shepherd were the sons of a Thomas Shepherd of Salem, N. J., who died about 1721. He is known to have left at least one son whose name was Moses—a name that has been religiously perpetuated among the descendants of Thomas Shepherd of Virginia. Moses was born 1698, and being, perhaps, the eldest son, received at the death of his father the usual double portion and after his marriage to Mary Dennis in 1722 settled on the parental estate at Bacon's Neck, Salem Co., N. J. Notwithstanding there has been no record found of other children of this Thomas we may reasonably assume that there were such, and the sons, when they had received their patrimony, crossing over into Maryland with other colonists from those parts, that Janney speaks of,—hence we find them in St. John Parish, Prince George's Co., Md..

Thomas Shepherd, of Salem, was one of five emigrants of same surname who appear in Burlington Co., N. J., and are said to have come from Co. Tipperary, Ireland, in 1683. Of these: Thomas, David, John and James were brothers, the other, Moses, was supposed to be. Remaining but a short time at the seat of the Proprie-

tary Government of West Jersey, they removed to Shrewsbury in the Province of East Jersey. The brothers stayed here but a short time; Moses remaining but afterward settling permanently at Woodbridge, in Middlesex Co. The four brothers meanwhile returned to West Jersey and bought contiguous tracts of land along the Cohansey river in Salem Co., about 1690, and named the locality Shrewsbury in remembrance of their first home in East Jersey.

In Ireland, these brothers were members of a Baptist Meeting at Glough-Keating, in Co. Tipperary. About the first thing that David did after getting settled on his Cohausey plantation was to organize a Baptist church and gave the ground for its first place of worship. Rev. Thomas Killingworth was called to minister over this congregation. Afterwards some of Davids' descendants were its pastors. Many of the Shepherds joined the Society of Friends who were quite numerous and influential in this neighborhood.

David Shepherd m. Eve (Abbott?). He died in 1695, leaving nine children. James Shepherd m. Ann (Chatfield?). He died in 1713, leaving two daughters: Rachael and Hester. John Shepherd died unmarried in 1715. Thomas Shepherd died about 1721. Thomas was an extensive owner of land along the Cohausey river, was a very active man of affairs in that community. Among his neighbors were James Nevil and John Hardin, both of whom paid quit rent on small properties in 1690. Richard Morgan was another paying quit rent in the same year, on 500 acres.

These were neighbors of Thomas Shepherd, the elder, in New Jersey; and of Thomas Shepherd in Maryland and Virginia at later periods. And it is a striking fact that in the list of Jost Hites' grantees for land in the valley of Virginia, appears the name of Richard Morgan for 500 acres, and of Thomas Shepherd for 220 acres, for tracts near each other, both grants being dated October 3rd, 1734.

ADDENDA AND CORRECTIONS.

The writer desires to correct some statements made on page 53 of the January number of this magazine, with reference to the Hite family.

It now appears that Jost Hite did not have a *son* named Thomas, nor a daughter named Susanna. The authorities upon which these

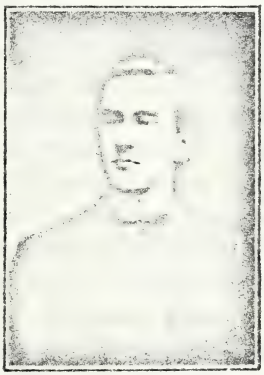
statements were based being in error to that extent. And also: Jacob Hite did not marry Mary Van Metre. A valued correspondent writes me that Jacob Hite, the son of Jost Hite, married first: Cathrine O'Bannon, in Dublin, Ireland; second: Mrs. Frances (Madison) Beale, widow of Tavener Beale, sister of Col. James Madison, of Orange county, Virginia, and aunt of James Madison, sixth President of the U. S. She was a daughter of Ambrose and Francis (Taylor) Madison of Orange Co., Va.

Since the publication of the notes relating to the Van Meter family in the January number of this magazine, the writer discovers, that, in addition to the children of Joost Janse Van Meteren and Sarah du Bois named therein, that they had another son: Hendrix, who was baptized at Kingston, 1st Sept. 1695. The sponsors were: Abraham du Boys and Jan Hamel. A record has also been found, which states, that an inventory of the personal estate of John Jooster Van Metere (Dutch) was filed in Burlington, N. J., on 13 June, 1706, which fixes its value at £235,14.0 including: "6 negro slaves, a man, a woman and four children £145." This was sworn to by John Van Mater.

SAMUEL GORDON SMYTH.

West Conshohocken, Pa., March 14th, 1903.

AUGUSTA MEN IN THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR



JOS. LYON MILLER, M. D.

Beginning in 1753 war raged along the frontier of Virginia, for more than ten years. War in its most horrible form, for it was war

waged with a savage people of the most cruel nature, encouraged and aided by one of the most civilized nations of Europe. It was the French and Indian war; the traditions of whose gashed cades, butcheries, and scalpings are yet repeated by the descendants of those Scotch-Irish pioneers of Augusta, which at that time extended from the Great Lakes on the north of Tennessee on the south and the Mississippi on the west. It is seen that the present state of West Virginia was therefore a part of that county. A large part of West Virginia was peopled by the growth westward of the Augusta settlements, and so it may be of interest to West Virginians to learn something of their warrior ancestors.

The battles, if they may be called such, and the isolated murders of this war with its other horrors have been so well written up by Hon. Jos. A. Waddell in his Annuals of Augusta county, that I shall not attempt to touch upon that part of the war. Some one probably asks, what then is left to tell? It may be answered, the names of those who had part in the war. In this day of patriotic societies, such as Sons of Colonial Wars, sons of the Revolution, &c., and ancestor hunting, a list of soldiers of those early days is welcomed warmly by a great many people who have not the opportunity themselves of searching original records or rare old books for the military record of some ancestor.

In Richmond is a great mass of certificates of soldiers who proved their services in the French and Indian war, and received grants of land from Virginia in payment thereof. These certificates are being copied for the Virginia Historical Society, which no doubt will print a list or index of the same in future numbers of the Va. Historical Magazine. The following lists of more than a thousand names are taken from: Volume seven of Hunning's Statutes at Large of Virginia, which has been out of print since 1820; from the so called Preston Register, a part of the Draper historical collection belonging to the Wisconsin Historical Society. This list was printed in the Virginia Historical Magazine in 1894, and in the Annals of Augusta County in 1902. I have also picked out the Augusta men from some lists published several years ago by the Virginia Historical Society. My object in reprinting these lists is to bring them to the notice of a greater number of people in this State than they would have in the first named publications.

My first list of 729 names is taken from Henning. I wish first to offer a few explanatory notes before giving the list of names. In the original there are twenty-two pages of names jumbled together with out any arrangement either alphabetically or by commands. Mixed through the list of soldiers are the names of people who furnished provisions and horses to the troops, and others who worked on the forts, &c. Many of the names appear several times, although the different items probably refer to the same man. Where there is no distinguishing mark as Sen., Jun., or rank I have designated the number of entries for that name by a number immediately preceding the name.

Several of the names show some slight changes in spelling, and these I have grouped under the commonly accepted form, as for example McClung, appears as McClong, McClunge and McClung. I have thought best to not take up the large amount of space in the magazine that would be needed to give the amount of money each person received.

Although there are some names in the following lists of undoubted English or German origin I have thought best to include them with those of the Scotch-Irish.

In September 1758 the House of Burgesses appropriated £20,000 to settle the arrears in the pay of the militia, that had been engaged in the French and Indian war previous to that date, together with the accounts due for furnishing provisions, &c., to the troops, and for work on the forts. Of this amount the Augusta people received £3,866-3s-5d or nearly three times the sum received by any other county.

LIST OF MILITIAMEN.

COLONELS.

Buchanan, John. Stewart, David.

MAJOR.

Smith, John.

CAPTAINS.

Buchanan, John,
(2) Christian, William.
Dickinson, John,
Maxwell, John.
Norwood, Samuel,
Preston, William,

Dunlop, James,
(2) Hays, Andrew,
Kirtley, Francis,
Love, Ephraim,
Sayers, Alexander,
Smith, John,
Smith, Abraham.

LIEUTENANTS.

(2) Archer, Sampson,
Bingaman, Christian,
(2) Buchanan, Archibald,
Cunningham, William,
Henderson, James,
Hamilton, Alexander,
Hopkins, John,
Lewis, William,
Maxwell, John.
McDowell, James,
Peterson, Edwin,
Rennick, Robert,
Smith, Daniel,
Smith, John, Jr.,
(2) Smith, Abraham,
Thompson, Alexander,
Wilson, Charles,

ENSIGNS (2ND LIEUTENANTS.)

Cunningham, ———,
Henderson, John,
Henderson, James,
Hopkins, John.
Matthews, John,
Paul, Andley,
Wilson, Josiah,

SERGEANTS.

Armstrong, Robert,
Bowin, John,
Buchanan, Alexander,
Clark, William,
Conden, James,
(3) Cravens, William,
Davice, John,
Edmiston, William,
Gamble, Mathew,
Galloway, David,
Hansley, Benjamin,
Henderson, Michael,
Howard, Edward,
Hudson, Thomas,
Hugart, Thomas,
(2) Kinley, Benjamin,
Looney, Peter,
(3) McKay, John,
Ozban, John,
Wardlaw, John.

CORPORALS.

Cadon, Thomas,
Fhares, John,
Friend, James,
Gay, John,
Jameson, James,
Kinley, Benjamin,
Lusk, Robert.
Malcomb, Robert,
McCome, Thomas,
Mintor, William,
Pritchard, Thomas,
Stevenson, Adam,
Tremble, Robert,

PRIVATES.

(2) Allen Hugh,
Allen, James,
Allen, James, Jr.,
Allen, Robert,
Allen, Robert, Jr.,
Algier, Mogis,
Alexander, Archibald,
Armstrong, Robert,
(3) Armstrong, John,
Armstrong, William,
Archer, Sampson,
Armontrout, Christopher,
(3) Black, John,
Black, William,
(3) Black, Matthew,
(2) Black Robert,
Black, Anthony,
Blor, John,
Botters, Jacob,
(2) Bowin, John, Jr.,
Bowin, Henry,
(2) Bowin, Moses,
Bowin, Reice,
Bowin, William,
Bowin, Thomas,
Bowers, Thomas,
Royne, Thomas,
Boyd, Robert,
Bratton, William,
Brackenridge, Robert,
Bradshaw, James,
Brown, John,
Brown, Robert,
Burk, James,
Burnsides, James,
Buchanan, Alexander,
Buchanan, James,
Aberman, Jacob,
Aberman, John,
Adkins, Gardner,
(2) Anderson, George,
(2) Anderson, William,
(3) Anderson, James,
Anderson, Robert,
(3) Alexander, James,
Alexander, Francis,
Allison, Charles,
Anon, James,
Barrow, Thomas,
Baskine, Thomas,
Baskine, John,
Barkley, George,
Belche, Robert,
Beret, Dimrick,
(2) Beningar, Henry,
(2) Bell, James,
Bell, David,
Bell, John,
Bell, Samuel,
Bell, William,
Bist, Abraham,
Bingamon, John,
(2) Blackwood, William,
(2) Blair, William,
Blair, James,
Blair, John,
Barlane, James,
Briggs, Samuel,
Bryans, James,
Bryans, David,
Buyers, William,
Bunton, James,
(2) Buchanan, Andrew,
Buchanan, William.

Carr, John,
Carr, Richard,
Carr, Henry,
Carr, Samuel,
(2) Carvin, William,
Capliner, George,
Castle, Valentine,
Cantley, John,
Cain, John,
Caghey, James,
Cashaday, Thomas,
Carlile, Robert,
Cardovan, ———,
Cartmill, James,
Cartmill, John,
Campbell, Hugh,
Campbell, James,
(2) Campbell, John,
(2) Campbell, Matthew,
Campbell, Robert,
Cenny, Edward,
Clark, George,
Clark, John,
Cloyd, James,
Cloyd, Michael,
Clement, Christian,
Clerk, John,
Clerk, Joseph,
Cleeke, Matthias,
Cloud, Daniel,
Clendinin, Arsbel,
Clendinin, John,
(2) Cunningham, John, Jr.,
Donlop, Nathaniel,
Dunlap, John,
Dunlap, Adam,
Driver, Charles,
(2) Dunkle, John,
(2) Dunkle, George,
Christian, Gilbert,
Cooper, Jeremiah,
Cosby, John,
Cornet, Martin,
Conway, Darby,
(2) Conrod, Woolrey,
Conrod, John,
Conrod, Walter,
Colley, John,
Colley, Christopher,
Conch, Tetrarch,
Coler, Henry,
Cogh, Phelty,
(3) Colter, James,
Corgon, Patrick,
Crosby, John, Sr.,
Crosby, John, Jr.,
(4) Craig, Alexander,
Craig, Robert,
Cravens, William,
Crevens, John,
Crurothers, William,
Croford, George,
Crump, Edward,
Crockett, John,
Cull, James,
(4) Cunningham, William,
(3) Cunningham, John,
Cunningham, Andrew, Jr.,
(4) Cunningham, Robert,
Cunningham, Jacob,
Cunningham, Walter,
Curry, William,
(5) Davis, John,
Davice, Samuel,
Davies, Benjamin,
(2) Davison, John,
Davison, James,
Davison, George,

Dew, Robert,
(3) Dicton, Joseph,
Dice, Matthias,
Diver, Hugh,
(2) Elliot, William,
Elate, William,
Erwin, Edward,
Erwin, William,
Erhart, Michael,
Erhart, Abraham,
Evans, Daniel,
Evans, Nathaniel,
Ford, Thomas,
Ford, Samuel,
Fie, Charles,
(2) Finley, John,
(2) Finley, John, Jr.,
Finley, Robert,
Finney, Christopher,
Fitzpatrick, Andrew,
Fleming, William,
Fowler, James,
Folk, Londwig,
Goodman, Jacob,
Goodman, George,
Goodwin, Daniel,
Gray, David,
Gatlive, James,
(2) Greer, Arthur,
(2) Gragg, William,
Gragg, Robert,
Green, Jeremiah,
Grub, Jacob,
(2) Graham, Jacob,
Graham, John,
Gilmore, James,
Gipson, George,
(3) Gibson, Robert,
Gifins, James,
Dunklebery, Abraham,
Dyer, William,
Dyer, Roger,
Early, John,
Eberman, John,
Eberman, Jacob,
Eberman, Michael,
Edmundsen, Moses,
Edmundson, David,
Edemston, Samuel,
Eister, Frederick,
Farrell, John,
Farses, Edward,
Ferrel, John,
Friend, James,
Friend, Jonas,
Frees, Michael,
Frank, Nicholas,
Frazier, John,
Fudge, Jacob,
Full, Andrew,
Fults, George,
Fulse, John,
(2) Gamble, James,
Gamble, John,
Gay, James,
Gallan, David,
Gray, James,
Getty, Dennis,
Getty, James,
Gilespy, Hugh,
Gillaspey, James,
(2) Gilkison, Archibald,
(2) Gilmore, John,
Gilmore, Thomas,
Grimes, Robert,
Grimes, James,
Guin, David,
Gunn, George,

(2) Gordon, John,
(2) Hamilton, William,
(2) Hamilton, John,
Hamilton, Moses,
Hamilton, James,
Hamilton, Audley,
Hamilton, Thomas,
Hamilton, Robert,
(2) Harper, Adam,
Harper, Philip,
Harper, Jacob,
Harrison, Nathan,
(2) Harrison, Nathaniel,
(2) Harrison, John,
Harrison, Gideon,
Havener, Jacob,
(2) Havener, Nicholas,
Hairing, Leonard,
Hall, Moses,
Hall, Andrew,
Hawl, John,
Hamer, George,
Hagler, Benjamin,
Hagler, John,
Hagler, Jacob,
Hagler, Postine,
Hanburgher, Stephen,
Hays, John,
Hardin, John,
Henry, Robert,
Jameson, Andrew,
Jameson, George,
(2) Jenkins, Jeseph,
Keeny, Abraham,
Kelly, Michael,
Kerre, Samuel,
Kerr, William,
Kenaday, James,
Kenaday, William,
Gum, John.
Henderson, Samuel,
Henderson, Daniel,
(2) Herron, Leonard,
Hedrick, George,
Hedrick, Adam,
Herman, Caleb,
Hemphill, Samuel,
Hecks, Henry,
Hornbery, Jacob,
Homes, Robert,
(2) Hogshead, Michael,
Hog, William,
(3) Hooks, William,
Hooks, James,
Hopkins, Archibald,
Hughs, John,
Hugart, James,
Hugart, James, Jr.,
Huffman, Nicholas,
Huffman, Philip,
Huffman, Honicle,
Hutchinson, John,
Hutchinson, William,
Huston, James,
Huston, Samuel,
Huston, Archibald,
Huchman, Holerick,
Hunter, Robert,
Hudson, John,
Jones, Jonathan,
(2) Johnson, John,
Jordon, John.
Kite, William,
(2) Kite, George,
Kite, Gabriel,
Kite, Jacob,
Kite, Valentine,
Kinsey, William,

(2) King, John,
(2) King, George,
Kilpatrick, John,
Kinley, Benjamin,
Long, William,
Long, Daniel,
(2) Long, John,
(2) Long, Henry,
Logan, James,
Lowry, Patrick,
Lowry, John,
Low, John,
(2) Lockart, James,
Lorimore, Thomas,
Lusk, Robert,
Lyle, John, Jr.,
Lyle, Daniel,
Lyle, Samuel,
McAnally, Charles,
McBridge, Daniel,
McAlhaney, John,
McCutchinson, Samuel,
McCutchinson, John,
McCutchinson, James,
McCutchin, William,
McComey, Robert,
McCarney, Robert,
McComb, Thomas,
McClanahan, Alexander,
McClung, James,
McClung, John,
McClung, Thomas,
McClung, Joseph,
McCloskey, Robert,
McCroskey, David,
(3) McClure, James,
McClure, John,
McClure, Arthur,
McClurr, Halbart,
Kinsey, Benjamin,
Kinsel, Cunrod,
Kindler, Jacob,
Lawn, John,
Lawrence, Thomas,
Lawrence, James,
Lard, David,
Lapesty, William,
Laferty, Ralph,
Lewis, George,
Lee, James,
Leonard, John,
Leeper, *Going*,
Leeper, *Gaun*,
Legat, Alexander,
(3) Little, Andrew,
(2) Little, Adam,
(2) Lindsey, Matthew,
Mayers, John,
Mase, Richard,
Massey, John,
Mallow, Michael,
Mallow, George,
(4) Malcom, John,
Man, Charles,
Man, George,
Man, Jacob,
Matthews, John,
Matthews, George,
Matthews, Richard,
Matthews, William,
Matthews, Joshua,
Matthews, Sampson,
Marchel, George,
Mar, William,
Magavock, James,
Matthis, William,
Megary, Robert,
Meteer, James,

MacKlure, Hugh,
(2) McCoy, Robert,
McCoy, John,
McCormick, Adam,
McCormick, Joshua,
(2) McCollom, Henry,
McCollom, Hendrey,
McCulley, John,
McDowell, Samuel,
McDonnall, Bryan,
McElvan, Alexander,
McFerrin, Thomas,
McFerrin, John,
McFerrin, James,
McFerrin, Samuel,
McFarlin, William,
McGill, William, Sr.,
McGill, William, Jr.,
McGarey, Hugh,
(2) McGarey, Edward,
(3) McGarey, Robert,
McHenery, James,
Makenry, William,
McKay, John,
McKenney, William,
Maclemare, Thomas,
McMurray, Samuel,
McMullin, William,
McMullan, Alexander,
McNely, Dennis,
McNeal, John,
McNight, Daniel,
(2) McNamar, Thomas,
Nichols, Thomas,
Nosler, Poston,
Pence, Jacob,
Peterfish, Gunrod,
Philips, Martin,
Pickins, Gabriel,
Melcum, John,
Melcum, Joseph,
Medley, John,
Miller, David,
Miller, John,
(2) Miller, Adam,
Miller, Peter,
Miller, Jacob,
(8) Minnis, Robert,
Mildebarler, Nicholas,
Mitchell, John,
Mitchell, Robert,
Mitchell, David,
(3) Minter, William,
Miligan, James,
Miscampbell, Andrew,
Moyers, Jacob,
Mouse, George,
Moore, David,
Moore, John,
Moore, William,
(3) Moore, James,
(3) Montgomery, John,
Montgomery, Robert,
Montgomery, Samuel,
Montgomery, James,
Montgomery, James, Jr.,
Montgomery, Joseph,
Moffett, George,
Moses, Peter,
Moses, George,
Murray, Henry,
Murphy, Lawrence,
Null, Nicholas,
(2) Patterson, Robert,
(2) Patterson, Thomas,
(3) Patterson, James,
(3) Patterson, Samuel,
(3) Patton, Matthew,

Porter, Patrick.
Porter, John.
Polog, William.
Powell, Thomas.
Pointer, Thomas.
Props, Michael.
Props, Adam.
Price, Daniel.
Pryor, Richard.
Plunkett, John.
Putt, John,
Purzins, William.
(3) Rolestone, William,
Rolestone, Matthew,
Rolestone, Samuel,
(3) Rolman, Jacob,
Ross, William,
Robertson, James,
Robertson, George,
(3) Robinson, George,
Robinson, Thomas,
(2) Robinson, John,
Rowland, George,
Rogers, George,
Rollin, Matthew,
Rush, Charles,
Rush, James,
Runkle, Jacob.
Smith, Thomas,
(2) Smith, David,
(3) Smith, Gasper,
Snodgrass, John,
Snodgrass, James,
(2) Spencer, Thomas,
Sproul, John,
Sprout, John,
South, Isaac,
Stewart, Alexander,
Stewart, James,
Patrick, John,
Patrick, Charles,
Paxton, Thomas,
Peterson, John,
Peterson, Jacob,
(2) Peterson, Thomas,
Peterson, Martin,
Peterson, Samuel,
(2) Peniger, Henry,
Pearpoint, Larkin,
Peary, John,
Ramsay, James,
Ralston, William,
Randols, Francis,
Reiger, John,
Reity, Francis,
Remi, Daniel,
Reed, Eldad,
Reed, William,
Rheah, Archibald,
Rheah, William,
Rheah, Robert,
Richards, Jacob,
Richards, John,
(2) Reburn, John,
Reburn, Adam,
Risk, James,
Sample, Moses,
Sayers, David,
Sayers, Sampson,
Savage, Patrick,
Scott, David,
Salley, John,
Semple, Samuel,
Seller, John,
Seirl, Thomas,
Shill, John,
Shields, John,
Shanklin, Edward,

Stuart, James,
Stuart, John,
Stuart, Robert,
Still, John,
Stilt, John,
Steenson, James,
Stephenson, Thomas,
(2) Stephenson, Adam,
(2) Stephenson, James,
(2) Stephenson, John,
(3) Stevenson, John,
(5) Stevenson, James,
Stevenson, Adam,
(2) Stevenson, Robert,
Steel, Robert,
(4) Steel, James,
Stoder, Christopher,
Stoten, Timothy,
Sutherland, Alexander,
Sullivan, Cornelius,
Todd, Samuel,
Tobit, James,
Tolford, Robert
Tolford, David,
(2) Trader, Arthur,
Trusler, Peter,
(5) Trimble, Robert,
Trimble, John,
Trimble, Walter,
Turk, James,
Tuley, Christian,
Umble, Gunrod,
Umble, Martin,
Vance, John,
Vanhob, Joseph,
Wilson, George,
(2) Wilson, James,
Wilson, John,
Wilson, Thomas,
(4) Shanklin, John,
(2) Shanklin, Richard,
Shipman, Josiah,
Shipman, Isaiah,
Shever, Paul,
Shidmore, Joseph,
(2) Shidmore, John,
(2) Shidmore, James,
(2) Shannon, William,
(2) Shaddin, Matthew,
Shaver, Paul,
Shaw, William,
Shillinger, George,
(2) Sivers, Nicholas,
Sitolentown, Andrew,
Simpson, James,
Sloder, Lodovick,
Smith, John,
(2) Smith, Henry,
Taylor, William,
Teucher, William,
Thompson, John,
Thompson, Moses,
(2) Thompson, Robert,
(3) Thompson, James,
Thompson, John,
Thompson, Robert
Thompson, Alsaham,
Thompson, Alexander,
Tice, Matthias,
Tinley, John,
Umble, Ury,
Veneman, Peter,
Vance, Thomas,
Watts, Edward,
(2) Watts, George,
Ward, James, Sr.,
Ward, James, Jr.,
(2) Ward, William,

Wilson, Hugh,	Ward, Joseph,
(3) Wilson, William,	Walker, John,
(3) Wilson, Richard,	Walker, William,
Willey, John, Sr.,	(2) Walker, Alexander,
Willey, John, Jr.,	Walreaner, Jones,
Willey, John,	Wagoner, Lodowick,
Willey, Robert,	Wardlaw, James,
Williams, John,	White, Cornons,
Wilmonth, Thomas,	Whitely, Jonathon,
Woitlaw, James,	Wizer, John,
Woitlaw, John,	Withlaw, John,
(2) Woods, John,	Wiece, Jacob,
Woods, William,	Wiece, Joseph,
Whitesides, Moses.	Yacome, Filey,
Young, Robert.	Yedley, Richard,
(5) Young, John,	(5) Young, James.

The following names of Augusta men are from some size rolls published ten years ago by the Virginia Historical Society:

Size Roll of Major Andrew Lewis' Company (no date).

NAME.	AGE.	SIZE. ft-in.	TRADE.	COUNTRY.	WHERE ENLISTED.
Adams, Francis	24,	5-10	Shoemaker,	England,	Augusta.
Aliot, Robert	30,	5-7½	Farmer,	England,	"
Brown, John	26,	5-7	Planter,	England,	"
Body, William	30,	5-5	Farmer,	Scotland,	"
Brannin, Thos.	30,	5-3½	Sch'lm'st'r,	Scotland,	"
Cooper, Samuel	23,	5-3¼	Farmer,	Penn.,	"
Donnally John	17,	5-6½	Planter,	Virginia,	"
Donnally, Mark	30,	5-6	Brewer,	Ireland,	"
Davis, Thomas	23,	5-1½	Farmer,	England,	"
Evans, Abraham	22,	5-4¼	Farmer,	Penn.,	"
Gilmore, John	27,	5-8½	Farmer,	Ireland,	"
Gailor, Edward	36,	5-6½	Butcher,	England,	"
Green, John	30,	5-4	Farmer,	Ireland,	"
Garome, Moses	27,	5-3	Shoemaker,	Ireland,	"
Kegan, Thos.	26,	5-4	Farmer,	Ireland,	"
Lain, Thos.	21,	5-8½	Sailor,	England,	"
Lucaner, William	27,	5-1½	Farmer,	Ireland,	"
Mander, William	43,	5-4	Farmer,	Ireland,	"

NAME.	AGE.	SIZE. ft-in.	TRADE.	COUNTRY.	WHERE ENLISTED.
McEntire, John	25,	5-3½	Farmer,	Ireland,	"
Ponty, John	20,	5-5	Carpenter,	Maryland,	"
Perkisson, Thos.	23,	5-5½	Roper,	England,	"
Picket, Henry	19,	5-7½	Sawyer,	Virginia,	"
Riley, John	26,	5-6	Farmer,	Ireland,	"
Roberts, Joseph	30,	5-4	Skener,	Ireland,	"
Smith, Levi	16,	5-6	Planter,	Virginia,	"
Smith, John	30,	5-1½	Farmer,	Ireland,	"
Swiney, Terence	40,	5-5	Ind'n tr'der,	Ireland,	"
Tate, David	40,	5-8	Ind'n tr'der,	Ireland,	"
Williams, Joseph	21,	5-7	Planter,	England,	"

Capt. Waggener's Company at Ft. Holland on Ye South Branch.

NAME.	AGE.	SIZE. ft-in.	TRADE.	COUNTRY.	WHERE ENLISTED.
McDoel, Samuel	26,	5-8	Shoemaker,	Ireland,	Augusta.

Capt. J. Lewis, 7th Comp. Virginia Regiment.

NAME.	AGE.	SIZE. ft-in.	TRADE.	COUNTRY.	WHERE ENLISTED.
Duvret, Covey	28,	5-4½	Seaman,	England,	Augusta.

Capt. Henry Woodward's Company, Sept. 21, 1757.

NAME.	AGE.	SIZE. ft-in.	TRADE.	COUNTRY.	WHERE ENLISTED.
Campbell, George	25,	5-7¾	Blacksmith,	Ireland,	Augusta.
Fields, Henry	22,	5-3	Butcher,	Ireland,	"
Fendley, Briant	23,	5-5	Glassmaker,	England,	"
Guptor, William	23,	5-1¾	Cordwainer,	Ireland,	"
Sinks, Jacob	31,	5-5	Carpenter,	Low Dutch	"
Shaw, Abr., Dr'm'r	44,	5-8	Planter,	England,	"

The Preston Register.

"A register of the persons who have been either killed, wounded, or taken prisoner by the enemy, in Augusta county, as also such as have made their escape."

NOTE.—I have thought best to economize in space by grouping the names according to locality. The original reading of this register may be seen in Waddell's Annals, and in the Virginia Historical Magazine for April, 1895. When not otherwise designated, it is to be understood "killed."

Monongalia River.

1754.—Robt. Foyles, his wife and five children.

Holston River.

1754, October.—Steven Lyon, John Goldman, Benjamin Harrison, —— Burk, prisoner, escaped.

1755, May 3.—Mary Baker, wounded.

1755, June 18.—Sam'l Stalnaker, prisoner, escaped; Samuel Hydon, prisoner; Adam Stalnaker, Mrs. Stalnaker, a servant man, Mathias Connie, 6-19, Michael Honck.

New River.

1755, July 3.—James McFarland, John Bingeman, Mrs. Bingeman, Adam Bingeman, John Cook, Henry Lin, a young child. Nathaniel Welshire, wounded, Dutch Jacob, wounded, Frederick Stern, wounded, Mrs. Bingeman, Jr., wounded, Mrs. Davies, wounded, Dutch Jacob's wife, prisoner, escaped. Isaac Freeland, his wife and five children prisoners. Bridgeman's son and daughter and a stranger, prisoners.

1755, July 30.—Col. James Patton, Caspa Barrier, Mrs. Draper and one child. James Cull, wounded; Mrs. English and her two children, prisoners, escaped; Mrs. Draper, Jr., prisoner, Henry Leonard, prisoner.

1756, March.—Vallentine Harman, Jacob Harman and one son, Andrew Moses.

Reed Creek.

1755, July 12.—Lieut. Wright and two soldiers.

1756, February.—Robt. Looney and a Dutchman.

1756, March.—John Lee, Michael Motes, Patrick Smith, Moses Man, prisoner.

Greenbrier.

1755, Aug. 12.—Henry Boughman, John Consi and his father-in-law, Walter Fishpough, George White, Mrs. Consler, Old Christopher, an old man, his wife and a school-master.

Sept. — John Thomas, Corporal Bennet; Mrs. Fishpough and 5 children, prisoners. Consler's daughter and Mrs. Ineny, prisoners.

Fort Vause.

1755, Aug. 12.—Morris Griffith, prisoner escaped.

1756, June 25.—Capt. John Smith, prisoner, returned; Peter Looney, prisoner, escaped; Wm. Bratton, prisoner, returned; Joseph Smith and Wm. Pepper, prisoners, Mrs. Vause and two daughters, a negro and two young Indians, and a servant man, prisoners. Ivan Medley and two daughters, prisoners, James Bell, Christopher Hicks, — Cole, — Graham, prisoners.

1765, June 25.—Benj. Daries, Mrs. Mary English, prisoners, William, Thomas and Saml. Robinson, wounded. Lieut. John Smith, John Tracy, John English, killed.

Sept. 12, 13, 14.—John Robinson killed, John Walker, prisoner.

Jackson's River.

1756, Sept. 11, 12, 13, 14.—Ensign Madison, Nicholas Carpenter, Steven Sorrel, James Mais, James Montgomery, Nicholas Nut, John Bird, George Kinkead, — Fry, Mrs. Boyl, three children named Parsinger, killed.

Joseph Swabs, — Willson, wounded, five children of Chas. Boyd, Mrs. Bird and six children, Mrs. Kinkead and three children, Mrs. Parsinger and two children, five children called Carpenter, Saml. Brown, a boy, — Snobs, a boy, prisoners. David Galloway, Mrs. McConnel, Joseph Carpenter, prisoners escaped.

1757, May 14.—And. Arnold, Henry Lawless, killed.

1757, July.—Mark Tallet, killed. A servant man, prisoner. James Allen, — Swabs, wounded.

1758, May 25.—Moses Moore, prisoner.

Forks of James River.

1757, July 25.—Robert Renick, Thos. Moon, killed. Mrs. Renick and seven children, Mrs. Denis, prisoners.

Craig's Creek.

1757, March.—Wm. Bradshaw and son prisoners.

July 25.—John Crawford, Jr., killed. Jno. Alex. Crawford, wounded.

Fort Dinwiddie.

1757, Sept.—Serj. Henry, killed.

1758, Jan.—Wm. Ward, a boy, killed.

Cow-pasture.

1757, Sept. —James Stuart, killed. James Stuart, Jr., James McClung and two children named Cantrell, prisoners.

1758, April 24.—John McCreary, Wm. McCreary, prisoners.

Catawba.

1757, Oct.—James McFerrin, killed. Wm. McFerrin, prisoner.

1758, March 20.— — Snodgrass, a girl, prisoner.

Brock's Gap.

1757, Nov. 3.—Three Dutch people, one killed, two prisoners. John States, killed. Abm. Merchant, killed.

1758, March 19.—Wm. Clepole, killed.

Roanoke.

1758, Jan. —A soldier of Capt. Woodward and a servant of Bryan's killed.

March 20.—James Gatlire, Joseph Love, Wm. Love, killed. A servant maid and a child prisoners.

South Branch.

1757, Feb.—Jacob Peters lost six children prisoners, one escaped.

May 16.—George Neese and two sons prisoners. Henry Lawrence, — Sudie, Michael Freeze and wife, killed.

1758, March 19.—Peter Moser, Nicholas Frank, John Coowod, killed. George Moses, Adam Harper, wounded. John Cunningham and two others (names forgotten) prisoners.

South Branch.

1758, April 24.—Capt. James Dunlap, John Hutchinson, Thomas Caldon, Henry McCullam, John Wright, Thomas Smith, Robert McNully, Wm. Elliott, killed.

April 27.—Mrs. Elliott, Ludwick Falck and wife, Adam Little, — Brock, John Ramsey, Wm. Burk, — Rooney, Wm. Woods, John McCulley, Thomas Searl, James Gill, John Guy and a stranger, killed.

28.—Capt. Sylest and 16 persons not known, on South Fork, prisoners. 24 persons at same place missing, South Fork prisoners.

CAPTAIN MICHAEL CRESAP AND THE INDIAN LOGAN.

In telling the history of a man, it is well to connect his ancestry and environment.

Before the Norman Conquest, in Yorkshire, England, lived a family whose characteristics were loyalty and bravery.

On the battle field of "Cressy" 1346, where the Black Prince with 30,000 *Englishmen* conquered Philip of Valvie with 100,000 Frenchmen, for exceeding bravery, the name of the ancestor of our hero was changed to "Cressy." In course of evolution it became Cresap.

The *insignia* of the family was a mailed head. "Brains and bravery."

Early in the reign of James 2nd, for the sake of religious liberty, many persons came to this country; among these (1686) was *Thomas Cresap* a youth of 15, who settled in Eastern Maryland. (Jacobs and Scharf.)

Being an intimate friend of Lord Baltimore, Thomas Cresap was persuaded by him, in due course of time, to remove to the western frontier of that Province as his agent, to defend it against the encroachments of Lord Fairfax.

So with his wife and little son Daniel, he emigrated to the *then* far West, the junction of the North and South branches of the Potomac.

Virginia and Maryland both claimed the territory. This was another case of geographical ignorance on the part of the English kings, and overlapping grants, like Lord Baltimore's controversy with the Penns, of Pennsylvanias with Virginia, in Dunmore's time.

Thomas Cresap was accordingly appointed to survey the western

boundary between Maryland and Virginia, and thus settle the dispute between Lords Baltimore and Fairfax.

After his survey, Cresap made a map which is still extant at Baltimore. On this map is this endorsement, by the son of Sec. Rideout —"*The Cresaps will be remembered forever.*" This survey of Thomas Cresap is still the legal boundary between Maryland and Virginia.

Thomas Cresap is named in the "*Treaty of the Six Nations.*" with the *Province* of *Maryland*, "says Scharf in his History of Maryland." Scharf remarks—"The family of Colonel Cresap was one of the oldest Maryland families, and from the time of the English Colonel until the present they have occupied a high position among the first families of Maryland."

The historian Jacobs says—"The Cresap family will not yield superiority to *any* family in Maryland or Virginia (page 29). This in view of Virginia being the "Mother of Presidents" is saying all, that the Cresaps themselves could desire.

Rev. Jacobs was himself a hero of Dunmore's and the Revolutionary War, and contemporary with both Colonel Cresap and his son Captain Michael. He was also the father of the late Governor Jacobs of Virginia, and is authority above gainsaying.

Colonel Thomas Cresap was a friend of the Washington family, says Jacobs, and mentions several visits made by General Washington to the old Colonel. Mr. Jacobs also records (page 33) "that Colonel Cresap was a member of "*the Ohio Company,*" with General Washington, George Mason and others, and, as the active agent of that company, laid out in 1751, the road from Cumberland, Md., to Pittsburgh. This work was so well done that Gen. Braddock followed it in his ill-fated campaign of 1755, and since that time, the road has been caller Braddocks' road; probably because it was the last road he ever traveled.

Colonel Thomas Cresap served valiantly in the French and Indian wars, under commission from the Governor of the Province dated July 17, 1754, and until their close. In 1756 he with his riflemen were serving in the mountains, where his second son was killed in a battle—"Thomas Cresap, Jr." The mountain from this fight has ever since been called "*Mt. Savage.*" Cresap had another skirmish with the Indians, when a giant slave of his was

killed, another was named for that occurrence, and *is still* "*Negro*" Mountain. (Jacobs and Scharf, p. 35-36 and p. 95.)

Col. Thos. Cresap's fort served as a place of refuge for the settlers, during the French and Indian wars. Scharf calls him (page 96) "*The guardian genius of the western frontier,*" and gives a letter (page 99) from the Colonel dated July 15, 1763 asking Governor Sharpe for "more men, to help defend his stockade and the desolate women and children who have fled there for safety, are in hourly danger of being massacred."

In times of peace, the Indians were welcomed, and they called on him in pretty large parties, as they repassed from north to south; and he kept a large kettle just for their use; and he also generally gave them a beef to kill for themselves every time they called, and his liberality toward them, gained for him, among them, the honorable title of the "*Big Spoon.*" (Jacobs page 38.)

The French and Indian wars were merged into trouble with England, and we find, from Scharf, Cresap was one of the "*Committee of Observation and Safety*" and *Leader of the Sons of Liberty.* Oct. 1765. (Scharf page 123.)

Later on we find him *successfully* encouraging his two remaining sons, and three of his grandsons to join the Revolutionary Army.

Col. Thomas Cresap went back to England when 70, and to Nova Scotia when almost an 100, and died aged 106. (Jacobs.)

Captain Michael Cresap the third son of Colonel Thomas Cresap, was born June 29th, 1742, in Frederick County, Maryland. His training and heredity, gave him the undaunted courage for which he was celebrated. His father sent him to an "Academy," kept by Rev. Mr. Craddock, near Baltimore, where he received a liberal education. Soon after his return home, he married Miss Mary Whitehead of Philadelphia, and started a store in "Old Town," Maryland, near his father's fort.

Jacobs quaintly relates, "Capt. Cresap was too liberal to make a fortune, and trusted too much: was honest himself, and thought others were, but experience taught him different." "I was clerking for him at the time, he charged me not to trust any one unless I *knew* him to be good, but if *he* was caught in the store himself, a plausible story from a man, or a piteous tale from a woman, would soon demolish the fortifications of his heart, and he would

say: "John, let this man, or this woman, have what they want!" This incident told by one who knew Cresap all his life, reveals the innate *tenderness* of the man.

But trusting out goods, with no expectation of recompense, would not support a growing family.

About this time, settlers from Va. and Md. were emigrating westward, mostly to the rich bottom lands, on the Virginia side of the Ohio river. (Scharf and Jacobs both are authority for the following.) Captain Cresap decided to go west and better his fortune. About 1770 he went to "Red stone old fort," (now Brownsville, Pa.) where he built the *first house with a shingle roof nailed on, west of the Alleghanies.* This property belonged to the Cresap family for many years, but was finally sold to Thomas and Basil Brown, brothers, who had emigrated from Maryland.

Early in the spring of 1774 Captain Cresap employed several active young men at $6.50 a month (it is given in *pounds*, &c.) to return with him to the Ohio, and assist him in clearing lands and building cabins. Being one of the earliest settlers, he had an opportunity to select some of the richest lands along the Ohio.

But there were some serious obstacles for pioneers to encounter. One was the western boundary, between Virginia and Pennsylvania, was not well defined, especially along the Ohio, *including Fort Pitt.* Both colonies claimed the territory. Virginia had possession, with the *traitor* John Connoly (as the next year *proved* him to be) as Lord Dunmore's Vice Governor, in charge, at the Fort.

This territory was called "Waugusta." (West Augusta), Lord Dunmore remained at Williamsburg. Fort Pitt was an important post: trade communication, and influence diverged from this point, in *all* directions among the Indians from Ill. and Mich., to Ky., Tenn. and the Carolinas.

No wonder both colonies claimed jurisdiction: moreover the stupidity of the English Kings had given it to both.

The Indian traders, moved by John Connoly and Lord Dunmore, sought to gain the attachment of the Indians for their respective colonies, and alienate them, each from the other!

Also, to stir up the Indians against the Americans, and enlist them on the side of the British! Why? Observe the date. The

spring of 1774! The tea had been put to steep in Boston harbor Dec. 16, 1773. The tyrannical "Boston Port Bill," had been passed March 14, 1774.

The muttering thunder of the approaching Revolution was reverberating from Massachusetts to Georgia. Lord Dunmore was too astute not to foresee the impending conflict, by the sword. He therefore determined, by setting the two colonies by the ears, and encouraging a war with the Indians, to *weaken the power of the colonies for resistance* to King George.

For proofs of both these items see, first the proclamation sent down from Congress to Va. and Penn., and beseeching them to "*terminate their difficulties* with each other, and *unite in the defense* of the *liberties* of America," &c., &c., and signed by Patrick Henry, R. H. Lee, Benjamin Harrison, *Benjamin Franklin*, George Ross and others. (Jacobs p. 61-62.)

For the latter statement *see* the account of the arrest of John Connoly, as he passed through Hagerstown, Md., after a visit to General Gage, at Boston, with *dispatches* from, and for, Lord Dunmore. (Scharf p. 136.) Also various histories of the times.

Such was the general state of affairs, and when Captain Michael Cresap went to fair Virginia's border. Of the success of Dunmore? He did not *hold* the colonies under the iron heel of Britain, though no more inveterate enemy of our Independence than he, (and his henchman Connoly) *could be found*. But he did *stir* up the *Indian war*, and cause the colonists untold suffering and loss.

Scharf says p. 102, and Jacobs coincides: "While Colonel Boquets' expedition of 1764 against the Indians, was supposed to enforce a peace with them, and there was no general uprising, yet, there was a *continuous Indian warfare*, a constant series of invasions; settlers, parents and children, tomahawked and scalped, and their houses burned, and sums up by saying, that *more lives were sacrificed* during the ten years, from 1764 to 1774, than were slain during the whole *outbreak* of 1774, *including* the bloody battle of Point Pleasant."

The historian Drake says: "The Indian hatchet was *never* buried." We give a few instances of this, among the many. In 1771 the Indians made a raid against 20 Virginians. The same year they killed some lonely settlers on the *border* of Va. also.

They boasted they killed 50 whites for every Indian slain. In 1772 Adam Stroud of Va. with his wife and seven children, fell beneath the tomahawk and scalping knife on the waters of the Elk.

In 1773 Richards on the Kanawha and Russell another Virginian, with five whites and two negroes were killed, also a Dutch family on the same river, in 1773. Then the family of Mr. Hogg on the Great Kanawha, were killed April 1774. (See Brantz, pages 38 and 39 and Scharf page 103.) Also William Butler's men April 16, 1774, near Yellow Creek.

About this time *George Rogers Clark*, a notable Virginian, had organized a company to lay out lands in Ky. "They were to rendezvous at the mouth of the little Kanawha, and for safety from the Indians, descend the Ohio in a body. The alarming reports from the Indians deterred many—writes Gen. Clark—about 80 or ninety men only met at the appointed rendezvous." (B. M. p. 72.)

A short distance above him, Captain Michael Cresap was with his men, clearing lands and erecting cabins, and while thus engaged he was suddenly stopped by a circular letter from John Connoly, Vice Governor of Va., *warning* them of an *uprising among* the *Indians*, dated April 21st, 1774. This letter was accompanied by a confirmatory message from Colonel Croghan and Alexander McGee, Esq., Indian agents and interpreters (Jacobs p. 50). Lord Dunmore's proclamation of April 25th, 1774, says: "We are in *danger* from the Indians. *I therefore order and require* the officers of the militia to embody, a sufficient number of men, to *repel* any *insult whatever*, and *all his Majestys subjects*, in *this colony* are hereby strictly *required* to aid *and assist therein*, or they shall answer the contrary at *their peril*." (Jacobs p. 58.)

We quote again from Gen. Clark. (Brantz Mayer p. 72.)

"A party of hunters 10 miles above us, were fired upon by the Indians, this, and many other circumstances, showed us, the Indians were *bent on war*. Our whole party were enrolled and we were determined to effect our settlements in Ky. An Indian town lay in our way called Horsehead Bottom, at the mouth of the Scioto. We determined to cross over and surprise it. Who was to lead us? Those among us, who had experience, we did not choose to be commanded by. We knew Captain Cresap an officer of experi-

ence was 15 miles above us, on the river, settling a plantation, and who intended to go with us to Ky., as soon as he fixed his people. It was *unanimously agreed* to send for *him* to command our party. Messengers were dispatched, and in half an hour returned with Cresap. He had heard of our resolution, from some of his hunters, who had met ours, and set right out to come to us. A council was held, and to our astonishment *our intended commander in chief dissuaded us* from our enterprise.—He was asked his advice. His answer was, "we should go to Wheeling, where we could learn what was going on,—a few weeks would decide, and if we found the Indians were not disposed for war, as it was yet early in the spring, —we could return and make our establishment in Ky."

His advice was adopted, and in two hours the whole party was under way. As we ascended the river, we met Killbuck an Indian chief with a small party. We had a long conference with him, but could get no satisfaction about the disposition of the Indians *as to war*. Cresap did not come to the conference but kept on the opposite side of the river. (Va. side.) He gave his reasons. Killbuck had often tried to waylay and kill his father, and if he crossed over his fortitude might forsake him, and he be tempted to put Killbuck to death."— Arriving at Wheeling we found the whole of the inhabitants of the country alarmed. They flocked to us from every direction. All the hunters in that quarter, men without families, joined us. We got to be a formidable party.—Connoly sent a message to our party, that "*war was apprehended,* but a few days would determine, as messengers had been sent to the Indians." —Connoly sent a *second* express addressed to Captain Cresap, as the most influential man among us, informing him "the messengers had returned, *and war was inevitable.*" *This* was April 21st. (Brantz Mayer p. 48.) (The Yellow Creek affair May 4th, Jacobs p. 133.—) Clark *continues:* "Connoly's letter was the epoch of open hostilities. A resolution was adopted to march the next day and attack *Logan's* camp about 30 miles above us, but *Cresap urged the impropriety of the project,* and it was finally agreed those Indians were a hunting party with no hostile intentions. *So we took the road back to Redstone, Va.*"

General Clark is certainly incontestable authority, and here and there notable instances of Capt. Cresaps wise and judicious conduct in regard to the Indians.

This *general attitude* towards them would acquit him of Logan's charge, had we no *other* proof. To think, Cresap was really the means of saving the lives of the *whole of Logan's party, (himself included* if he was at his camp)—for who can doubt the success of the whites,—if with their "*formidable*" numbers, (over an hundred now) they had *made* the *attack*, and then after such forbearance, to be accused of killing a *part* of them two days later at Yellow Creek! "Capt. Cresap," Gen. Clark says, was "entirety innocent." Logan probably heard of Cresap being at the head of the party on the river, and "supposed" he had a hand in it. Logan imagined or "supposed" his cabin was "full of devils" once. The missionary Rev. D. David McClure relates: "In the summer of 1772 he started for the Muskingum with a christian Indian as interpreter. The second day after his departure he unexpectedly encountered Logan. *Painted and equipped for war* and accompanied by another savage, he lurked a few rods from the path near a tree, leaning on his rifle; the missionary did not notice him, until told by the interpreter "Logan wanted to speak with him." McClure immediately rode to the spot where Logan remained, and asked "what he required?" For a moment Logan stood pale and agitated before the preacher, and then, pointing to his breast, exclaimed: "I feel bad here. Wherever I go, the Evil Manethoes pursue me. If I go in my cabin it is full of devils. If I go in the woods, the trees *and the air is full of devils.* They haunt me by day and night. They want to catch me, and throw me in a deep pit, full if fire." In this spirit of maudlin, moody, musing with the unnatural pallor still on his face, he leaned on his rifle and continued to brood on the haunting devils. McClure told him to reflect on his past life, and considered him weighed by remorse for the cruelties of past years." The same year Logan had "confessed to the missionary Heckwelder *his* unfortunate *fondness* for *fire* water." (Brantz Mayer p. 31 and 32, 33.)

Col. Zane, a well known historical name in Virginia and Ohio, and Col. Chaplaine of Wheeling, states—that "Captain Cresap was *with them at Wheeling* at the *time* of the *occurrence* at *Yellow Creek.*" Who would accept Logan's supposition—a drunken Indian, rather than an alibi given by those two men? Not to mention the testimony of the *actors in the tragedy* to be mentioned later on,

and others, besides Gen. Clark. We will relate the account (taken from Brantz Mayer p. 50, 53 and Scharfs Md. p. 107-108 given by the *actors* (leaving the reader to judge if *the whites were justifiable.*

The Yellow Creek Tragedy.

"The Indian camp was at the mouth of Yellow Creek on the Ohio side of the river, (above Steubensville.) On the Virginia side, near the river, just opposite, was the cabin of Joshua Baker who sold rum to the Indians, and of course received frequent visits from them. Mr. Baker had been *particularly desired by Captain Cresap to remove his liquors.*" Reader please note *that evidence* of Cresaps desire to prevent trouble. Baker had prepared to do so, as he was, also, alarmed by Connoly's *message.* The *night before* the affair, a squaw came over to Bakers, and aroused the attention of all by her crying and distress. For a time she refused to tell the cause of her sorrow, finally, when left alone with Baker's wife, she told *her* "the *Indians were coming to kill her and her family the next day!*" That as she loved her, and did not wish to see her slain, she had crossed the river, to tell the plot, so she might escape.

Alarmed at this astounding information, and in dread of the assassination, Baker summoned 21 of his neighbors, who all reached his house before morning; they resolved to conceal themselves in a back room, where they could watch the assaulting Indians. They also determined if the Indians conducted themselves peaceably, they should not be molested, but if hostilities were offered, they would show themselves, and act accordingly.

Early in the morning, a party of Indians composed of three squaws, one with an infant, and four unarmed men, one of whom was Logan's brother, crossed to Baker's Cabin, where all but Logan's brother obtained liquor, and became drunk. No whites, but Baker and two of his companions *appeared* in the room. After some time Logan's brother took down a coat and hat belonging to Baker's brother-in-law, and putting them on, set his arms akimbo, and strutted about the apartment; at length, coming up to one of the men, called him the vilest names, and attempted to strike him. The white man, Sappington, thus assailed by language and gesture,

—parried the blows, and for some time, kept out of his way, but finally, becoming irritated, seized his gun, and shot his persecutor, as he was rushing to the door, still clad in the coat and hat.

The men who had remained hidden, during this whole scene, now poured fourth and killed the whole party, *except the infant.*

But *before* they rushed out, and *began the killing, they had seen* two canoes, one with two, and the other with five Indians, *stealing from* the *opposite shore*, where *Logan's camp was*, all *naked*, and *painted* and *completely armed.* This was confirmation of the squaw's story, and was alleged in justification, afterwards, of the killing of the unarmed party, who first arrived. But this was not the only proof of the squaw's warning. Soon *two more canoes with eighteen* warriors *painted and armed* for conflict like the rest, had also started to assail the whites. By this time the drunkards were dead and the whites were at the river bank, and put all to flight. Those versed in Indian warfare, as these frontiersmen were, say it was their custom to take their women along, as if for hunting, then the warrior would follow. This was just the order of *these* events. In anticipation of a massacre, confirmed by the appearance of the painted warriors, together with the irritating behavior of Logan's brother, who can wonder at the result? With the squaws story of the coming massacre of the whites, and the appearance of the 25 warriors ready for the bloody work! The perpetrators of the act almost held that they were justified; and that, had they, not anticipated the Indians, *they* would have been the *victims.* The defenders of Bakers' cabin knew there was danger of the scalping knife for all. Did the warriors know or expect the unarmed Indians would assist them; or, simply occupy the attention of the Baker family till their *arrival?* One of the *actors* in the *affair* mentions, that the mother of the infant was Logan's sister, and the wife of John Gibson; that the infant rescued, was sent later, to Gibson who took care of it as his own (Jacobs, page 133, Brantz Mayer p. 54) also that the mother of Logan was one of the women slain.

Why do not those who have so many tears for this, to say the least *debatable occurrence*, shed some over the treacherous killing of "Cornstalk," a friend to the whites and ever an advocate of peace.—Chief of the Shawaness and King of the northern confed-

eracy: but, who when war came, in 1774 fought *openly* and gallantly at Point Pleasant but when vanquished, also *appeared* openly at Camp Charlotte, and signed the treaty for peace and *kept* it, but who was treacherously shot down with his son Elenipsico when on a friendly visit to Point Pleasant—there is eloquence without effort, in his words to his son whom he saw was agitated—"My son, if the Great Spirit has sent you here to be killed, die like a man." and as the soldiers approached the door, he arose to meet them and received 7 or 8 balls in his breast—and died. This was in the summer of 1775, and the story is not related by an *Indian*, but by Colonel Stewart. There is a deeper tragedy and one for which has never been found, the shadow of a justification, which might have drawn tears from the hardest heart, but Mr. Jefferson's eloquent pen passes it by,—that of the 93 *Christian Moravian Indians* who were burned to death at Gnadenhutten March 8th, 1782. They died singing hymns "victims of a love of peace" Howe says in the History of Ohio, p. 487.

However, justifiable, or not, we do not judge the Yellow Creek affair: only it is proven that *Cresap was not there, and had no hand in it.*

We left him at Wheeling with Col. Zane and Col. Chaplaine, while that affair was occurring. From thence, he went to his home in Maryland. Dunmore and Connoly knew whereof they had warned the people. The *war* was now, general. June 10th, 1774, Lord Dunmore unsolicited, and unexpected to him sent Captain Cresap, a commission in the Regt. of *Hampshire County, Va.* He had received many petitions, from his old companions, west of the mountains to "come to their aid," so he accepted it. (Jacobs says p. 68, 69) Cresaps popularity was so great, and so many flocked to his standard, that his company overflowed and he filled completely, the company of his nephew Michael Cresap, Jr., and *partly* filled that of Hancock Lee. Captain Cresap with his company joined Major Angus McDonald's command, and they marched against the Indian towns on the Muskingum. "Howe's Ohio," page 383 records their being at *Wakatomica* where *Dresden* now stands.

After this campaign they returned to Wheeling. Lord Dunmore had ordered Col. Lewis to raise an army of 1000 men to go to

the great Kanawha. He would raise another and join him, but we find Dunmore *in camp* near Chillicothe, which he called "Camp Charlotte." On the 10th October, 1774, the bloody battle of Point Pleasant was fought, in which many valuable officers were slain, among them Col. Charles Lewis, brother of Col. Andrew Lewis the commander. The Virginians however were victorious.

All this time and since May, Logan had been roaming up and down the land murdering unprotected settlers—men, women and children, *stealing in on them*. If Logan wanted to fight and was a great brave, why was he not in exposed battle with Cornstalk, Blue Jacket, and others. There he would have had fighting enough. He preferred creeping in on lonely and defenseless settlers, like Roberts, way down on the Holston river, near the Tenn. line, in Va. Here after killing and scalping every member of the family, and as if proud of the bloody deed, he left a war club with a note tied to it, which he had forced his prisoner Robinson to write with gunpowder ink: Capt. Cresap, what did you kill my people on Yellow Creek for? The white people kill my kin at Conertoga, a great while ago, and I thought nothing of that. But you kill my kin on Yellow Creek and took my cousin prisoner. Then I thought I would kill too, and I have been three times to war since. The Indians are not angry, only myself. July 21st, 1774. Capt. Logan. "This is the first charge made by Logan of the supposed murder of his relatives at Yellow Creek by Capt. Cresap—says Brantz Mayer page 57—and I must promptly rebuke it, by recalling the *facts of that occurrence*, against which *Cresap had protested* to *Clarks' party, and promptly drawn off his men from that locality* and departed!" But observe the other falsehood. The Indians all over the country *were angry* and on the war path. Connolys proclamation was dated April 21st and Dunmores April 25th to that effect, or *three months before*. By July 21st Logan's date, Major McDonald, was driving the Indians to the interior of Ohio—as Cresap's commission was dated June 10th or seven weeks previous.

His cousin, as he probably calls his sister's infant rescued at Yellow Creek, was hardly a "prisoner," as it had been promptly sent to its supposed father. Logan in this war club note, had not yet learned the "eloquence" of his "*conversation*" with Gibson, or

perhaps Dunmore, Sir William Johnson or some other celebrity, had not it in possession to put it in *rhetorical garb*. After the victory at Point Pleasant, Colonel Lewis joined Dunmore at Camp Charlotte. The Indians feared Lewis, and this junction of the two armies, made them ready for peace.

Cornstalk and the other braves who fought valiantly and *openly* were present. Logan who had been on a private and bloody trail for nearly six months *did not come*. Naturally they desired to be safe from such a Minotaur. Lord Dunmore therefore sent John Gibson the alleged father of the infant, *saved* at the Yellow Creek affair, to seek Logan. If, as is probable, the murdered squaw was Logan's sister he was an appropriate messenger. (Brantz Mayer p. 60 thus tell the story the same way.) He found Logan some miles off, at a hut with several Indians, and pretending, Indian fashion, he had nothing in view, talked and drank with them, till Logan touched his coat *stealthily*, Logan style, and *beckoning* him out of the house, led him *into* a solitary thicket, where, sitting down on a log he uttered some sentences of eloquence, which Gibson on returning to camp called for paper and wrote down—what proves to be neither a speech, a message nor a pledge of peace—Brantz Mayer *continues*—"Thus the famous "speech" of Logan celebrated as a fine specimen of Indian eloquence, *dwindles* into a reported "*conversation*," with a blood-stained savage, excited as much by the cruelties *he* had committed, as by liquor: *false* in its *allegations as to Cresap*, and at last, after being conveyed to a camp *six miles distant* in the *memory* of an Indian trader, written down and read by proxy in council." Gibson states in his affidavit, that he corrected Logan on the spot of his charge against Cresap: ("he knew Cresap's innocence") *"told him Cresap was not at Yellow Creek."*

We would like to go over the *"conversation"* sentence by sentence, but our limits forbid. We *must* take a *few*. This, "I appeal to any white man, if he ever entered Logan's cabin hungry and he gave him not meat, and if he ever came cold and naked and he clothed him not?" How many believe Logan was familiar enough with Matthew 25th chapter, to quote it thus literally? How many believe he had a cellar or restaurant; a wardrobe or a clothing store ready to supply visitors? He who was *"no chief"* but a *"wanderer."* Brantz Mayer p. 29.

Another sentence—"Col. Cresap in cold blood and unprovoked murdered *all* the relations of Logan not even sparing my women and children." Gibson told him *Cresap was not* at Yellow Creek. We have also seen, the murder was *not unprovoked*. *Falsehood* number *three*—as to children. *No* child was killed at Yellow Creek.

Again, "There runs not a drop of my blood in the veins of any living creature." Let us see. "In 1780 Logan was at a council at Detroit with Bird's British Myrmidom and Indian allies. He became wildly drunk, and in a delirious passion, *prostrated his wife* at a single blow of a tomahawk. The horrid deed partly sobered the savage and thinking he had killed her, and fearing the Indian penalty of blood for blood, fled to the wilderness. While traveling alone, still confused by liquor and the fear of vengeance, he was overtaken in the woods between Detroit and Sandusky, by a troop of Indians with their squaws and children, in the midst of whom he recognized his newphew "Tod-kah-dohs"—Thinking it was the *dreaful* avenger in the *form* of his nephew, and bursting into passion, he exclaimed "the *whole party should die.*" "Todkahdohs" seeing their danger and that Logan was well armed, told his companions, their only safety was in getting the advantage of the desperate man, by prompt action—Logan was alert too, but while leaping from his horse, to execute his dreadful threat, the nephew lifted his gun and killed Logan on the spot. Tod-kah-dohs "*the searcher.*" died in 1844 at Cold Spring on the Alleghany Seneca Reservation aged nearly 100,—was the son of Logan's sister and was originally from Conestoga. He left children, two of whim were seen by Lyman C. Draper in 1851, or 77 years *after* the tragedy. "Logan's blood ran in human *veins still.*" His wife recovered, but probably did not mourn for him. (Brantz Mayer p. 67.)

This "*conversation*" was put among his papers by Dunmore. It took a greater than Dunmore to *attract* attention to it. The heroes of Troy had Homer. Logan had Mr. Jefferson. The occasion was this—Mr. Jefferson wished to disprove Buffon's theory "*that* man degenerated in America," which was laudable, and finding in his pocket-book a memorandum made in the winter of 1774 of this alleged speech of Logan taken down from the lips of some one—"*whom he did not recollect*, inserted it in his notes, with a narrative of the supposed events that called it forth—Historians should know whereof they write.

Benjamin Tomlinson, "whose character for truth was unimpeached and unimpeachable says Scharfs' Maryland page 108, was officer of the day at Camp Charlotte, and heard the so called speech read three times: he gives it thus: "Logan was the white man's friend, on his journey to Pittsburg to brighten that friendship, all his friends were killed at Yellow Creek, now when he died who would bury him? for the blood of Logan was running in no creatures veins." Vastly different. He, Tomlinson, adds but *neither* the *name* of *Cresap nor any* other, *was mentioned* in the speech. Benjamin Tomlinson has grand-children and great-grand-children now among the noblest of *Virginia's* citizens. Note only *four* lines in his report.

Who put this "mendacious speech," as Brantz Mayer calls it, in its present form, we may discover when we find the "man in the iron mask."

Mr. Gibson who brought the "conversation" from the woods to the camp.—does not say it was accurate, only "nearly" as related by Mr. Jefferson, does not state where it diverges or how often. *It* grew from *4 lines to many* somewhere. Capt. Cresap had been dead many years, when the "notes" came out with the *false, so-called* speech appeared, but he is proven innocent by his contemporaries as follows:

Benjamin Tomlinson, a comrade of Cresaps in Dunmore's war and an *eye witness* of the Yellow Creek affair.

John Sappington, an actor in the Yellow Creek tragedy whose testimony, etc., is published by Mr. Jefferson.

Gen. George B. Minor, an intimate friend of Cresaps.

Dr. Wheeler of Wheeling, a resident at the time of the affair.

John Gibson, who corrected Logan in that "conversation" in the woods.

Rev. John J. Jacobs, an officer in Dunmore's war and the *Revolution.*

Col. Zane and Col. Chaplaine of Wheeling.

Col. Benjamin Wilson, Sr., an officer in Dunmore's army.

John Caldwell of Wheeling, who made an affidavit to this effect for Mr. Jefferson.

Gen. George Rogers Clark, a hero of Va. and Ky., of later Indian wars.

Logan, himself, who *told Capt. Wood* July 25, 1775, *afterwards Governor* of Va., that the "Virginians killed his mother, sister and people." Brantz Mayer p. 65, Jacobs p. 106.

Another correction. Sometimes Logan is called "chief." He imagined he was "some great one," also that his cabin was full of devils.

He was "no chief," "no captain," only a common Indian, says Benj. Tomlinson (Jacobs p. 134).)

John Gibson who ought to have known called him "the Indian Logan." (See his affidavit.)

Connoly calls him "Logan a Mingo Indian." (Jacobs p. 75.)

Jacobs says "he was no chief." All these were acquaintances contemporaries.

Brantz Mayer who searched the histories thoroughly says "he was no chief."

We think it is time, since men of national reputation have *proven* Cresap guiltless of Logan's charge of murdering his relations at Yellow Creek, also that Logan was "*no chief,*" and his "*conversation*" "no speech," and these notables have shown an alibi for him, *who were* at the council.—it is high time that this "conversation" *should be eliminated from the school books*, and the name of a hero be left clad in the truth and honor that it deserves; and therefore we finish our sketch of Captain Cresap.

We left him at Camp Charlotte. After the *treaty for peace*, which Capt. Cresap under Virginia's banner, helped to establish, he returned to his Maryland home for the winter of 1774. Early in the spring of 1775, his heart yearning for Virginia's frontier,—again he hired a band of young men and returned to the scene of his former labors.

But the battle of Lexington aroused all the colonies. The message from Congress to Maryland was—"raise two companies of rifle men, and as soon as formed, have them march to Boston"—these are the words—"Get experienced officers, and the very *best men that can be procured*, as well from your affection to the service, as for the *honor* of our *province*," and on *these* terms, Captain Michael Cresap was the *first* Captain selected by the *Province of Maryland* for the Revolutionary war. A messenger (Mr. Jacobs himself) was sent to the Va. frontier to notify Cresaps of his ap-

pointment. He met Cresap on his way home, from illness, and informed him that his aged father had pledged his acceptance of the commission. Cresap then sent the messenger back to tell his old companions in arms on the frontier, of his intentions. "This I did," says Jacobs, and soon collected and brought back 22 as fine fellows as ever handled a rifle. This shows the immense popularity of Cresap—leaving their families, their all, to join the standard of their old captain, on a message given by a boy, and from the very country where the Yellow Creek affair occurred. But the high estimation in which Capt. Cresap stood with his fellow citizens in Maryland, is shown by the fact, that in his own county, Frederick, his company increased to such a multitude that he was daily obliged to reject many." Brantz Mayer gives a letter written from Fredericktown to *Philadelphia*, July 1775, page 63. "I have had the happiness of seeing Capt. Michael Cresap marching at the head of a formidable company of 130 men, and upwards, armed with rifles and tomahawks, and though some of them had traveled, near 800 miles, from the banks of the Ohio, they seem to walk light and easy, and with no less spirit than at the first hours of their march."

Had Lord North have been present, he would have been assured, that the brave *leader could raise thousands* of such men, to *defend his country*. I had the opportunity of attending the Captain during his stay in town, and watched the behavior of his men, and the manner in which he treated them; for, it seems, that all who go to war *under him*, not only pay the most willing obedience to him as their commander, but look up to him as their friend and father." A great part of his time was spent in listening to, and relieving their wants, without any apparent sense of fatigue or trouble.

When complaints were made before him, he determined with kindness and spirit, and condescended to please without losing his dignity."

On page 131 Scharf gives a letter from Fredericktown to *Baltimore*. "Captain Cresap and his brave company have marched. I need not say anything of *Cresap's undaunted courage*, not an *American* but *knows him* to *be an intrepid warrior*, and of course he knows his *men*, and has culled them *from the many*." Henry Lee of Va., in his letter says: "Also 1500 Riflemen from Fred-

erick Co., Md., *under Colonel Cresap, Jr.*, have marched to prevent any troops from landing." In Virginia Capt. Michael was always called "*Colonel*," and the men who went all the way from Va. frontier to march *with him* to Boston, gave him that title, sometimes adding the "Jr." Perhaps he received the "*Colonel*" during the Revolution or earlier, *officially*. Schar tells p. 131: *Cresap's company was the first from the south to reach Cambridge*, where they arrived August 9th, after an arduous march of 22 days." Captain Cresap was in ill health when he started to Boston at his country's call. His incessant labors in the service, broke him down, he was obliged to ask leave to return home. He only reached New York, where he died October 18th, 1775, aged only 33, thirty-three years. On the following day, attended by a large concourse of people, he was buried with military honors in *Trinity churchyard*, and there he sleeps.

Captain Cresap left two sons, and three daughters. "Mary," the eldest, married the Hon. Luther Martin, Attorney General of Maryland, and a delegate from Maryland to the *Convention* which formed the *Constitution of the United States*. "Elizabeth," the second daughter, married "Lenox Martin," brother to Luther, also educated for the bar, but who went into the ministry of the M. E. church. "Sarah," the youngest daughter, married "Osbourne Sprigg," and one of *her sons*, "*Michael Cresap Sprigg*," represented *his own* district in *Congress from Maryland*. Another son, *James Cresap Sprigg*, emigrated to Ky., and was sent to Congress from *that* State.

Capt. Cresap's oldest son, "*James Michael Cresap*," received a college education, married well and settled at his father's old home, viz., "Old Town," Maryland. He was a frequent visitor at Baltimore and Washington, D. C., where he was called "*The elegant Alleghanian.*" He left only one son, the late Luther Martin Cresap, whom Scharf calls p. 102, "A man of unexceptionable character of liberal education, and *Cresap like* of a *mild and amiable* disposition.

He too remained at the family residence near "Old Town."

There, still stands the large stone house built by Captain Michael Cresap before 1774. (This is now *Alleghany Co.*, Md., formed from Frederick Co.) "*Michael*" Cresap, the youngest son of the

brave Captain and whom that father never saw—in early life married a beautiful woman, whose fair face resembled Lady Washington, and as good as she was fair, and they emigrated to the *Virginia frontier,* with a loving desire to carry out that fathers wish, of making a home in the very locality the Captain had chosen.

And there now, as well as through the south, still remain their descendants, true to the principles of their heroic ancestor, loyal to country and friends, and typical representatives of *historic Virginia.*

M. L. STEVENSON.

THE NATIONAL ROAD.

By G. L. Cranmer.

In no country, and especially in the case of a new country, can its development keep pace with its importance unless the means of communication for travel and traffic are fostered and established by public or private appropriations and influences.

At the close of our Revolutionary War there was an empire stretching westward of almost unlimited extent which was destined in the not distant future to become the center of power and untold wealth, but which at the time was mainly inhabited by savages and beasts of prey.

Before the Revolution and as early as the year 1768, Virginia recognized the advantages of a connecting road between the East and the West. In the last named year she authorized Thomas Walker, Thomas Rutherford, James Wood, and Abraham Kite, Gent., or any two of them to lay out a road from the north branch of the Potomac to Fort Pitt, and with a view of expediting the object the sum of two hundred pounds was appropriated by the Colonial Assembly.*

The purpose of this undertaking by Virginia was, that an advantageous trade might in this way be opened with the Indians on her western border, and the troops there be more readily and promptly supplied with provisions. The instructions to the Commissioners were to follow the Braddock trail as nearly as possible, the same being the route followed by that unfortunate General in his fatal expedition in 1755.

*Vide Henings Statutes at Large, Vol. 8, p. 272.

The result was they adopted the route indicated as nearly as might be as far as the Monongahela, and which to all intents and purposes subsequently became a link in the great National road.

Towards the close of the eighteenth century a continuous stream of emigration poured across the mountains to the western Eldorado. The fertility of the western lands, their cheapness, and the promising future of the section all combined to invite the influx of population. With a view of fostering the settlement and encouraging the development of that section of the country, a scheme was projected of building a great national highway extending from Philadelphia to the Ohio river, and thence traversing the Northwest Territory to St. Louis. At that day such a project was regarded by many as a utopian untaking and gave rise to much discussion both in, and out of Congress.

In 1802-3, upon the admission of Ohio into the Union as a State, she was admitted with the proviso, that of the public lands within her boundaries, one twentieth portion should be set apart, the proceeds of which should be applied to the construction of such a road through the State, and ultimately the same to be continued to St. Louis.

In the year 1806 by on act passed in that year Congress was fully awakened to the importance of the construction of a great public highway from Cumberland, Md., extending to the Ohio river, and Thomas Moore, of Maryland, Joseph Kerr and Eli Wilson, of Ohio, were named in the Act as Commissioners to decide upon the route.

In due time they made their report, which was approved by President Jefferson in 1808, as far as Brownsville, Pa., but from that point to the Ohio river it was left undetermined. The point at which the road should strike the Ohio was considered of the greatest local importance and hence each point from Pittsburg to a distance below Wheeling was strenuously engaged in pressing its respective claim as being superior, as it was anticipated that the location determined upon would eventually become a large and flourishing community.

It was at this time that the jealousy subsequently existing between Wheeling and Pittsburg had birth, and also with other points on the eastern shore of the river, and which was character-

ized by the greatest intensity of feeling and bitterness of partisanship. Hence it became an exceedingly delicate question for the commissioners to decide between the competing factors and consequently they left the matter upon for further decision. Afterwards the route from Brownsville to Wheeling was located by another and different commission, the engineer of which was a Mr. Weaver.

Operations on the road were promptly commenced and up to the year 1817 the building of the road had cost the sum of $1,800,000. In the meantime some portions of the road had been worn out and was in need of extensive repairs, when the question of its abandonment was agitated by its opponents, as being too expensive an undertaking.

In the year 1822 President Monroe issued his celebrated internal improvement message, in which he discussed with consummate ability the general improvement policy of the government, and enlarged upon the propriety of the government carrying out the original compact it had entered into with the State of Ohio by continuing the road west of the Ohio river.

The western division of the road leading from Brownsville to Wheeling as we have remarked was located by a commission of three persons in the year 1817, thus definitely fixing its Ohio terminus at Wheeling.

Considerable opposition subsequently arose as to the manner in which some of the contractors had performed their work as they were charged with a failure in complying with the provisions of their contracts, more particularly in regard to the masonry work, which resulted in some instances to the withholding of the whole or a portion of their compensation which afterwards in the shape of Bills for their relief found their way into Congress. Many of the contractors however made large fortunes out of their undertakings.

For the construction of the road west of the Ohio river from Canton (now Bridgeport) Ohio to Zanesville, Congress had in the year 1811 made an appropriation for the furtherance of the work which was nearly completed when in 1825 a supplementary act was passed, providing for a survey of the route to the left bank of the Mississippi river between the mouth of the Illinois river and St. Louis.

In 1827 an additional act was passed to complete the survey and extend the road to Jefferson City, Mo. At this time it had been completed beyond Columbus, Ohio, and in 1829 had been partly completed to the Indiana State line when an act was passed under which money was appropriated to lay out and grade the route through the State of Indiana. In 1831, that portion of the road in Ohio was ceded by the government to that State, except from Springfield to the State line of Indiana; and in 1834 that portion lying within the States of Maryland, Pennsylvania and Virginia was ceded to the respective States named.

In 1832 the building of the road in the States of Indiana and Illinois was placed under the control and direction of the War department and soldiers were employed in the further construction of it.

In 1833 the sum of $1,100,000 was appropriated towards the completion of the road in Ohio and those portions of it in the States of Indiana and Illinois, which in 1836 was followed by another expenditure of $600,000 for work done in the two last named States and in 1837 a like amount was appropriated for the same purpose. A strenuous opposition was brought to bear against the making of these appropriations but Henry Clay made a strong and successful fight in their behalf which proved successful, but their opponents made an earnest and determined effort to induce Gen. Jackson to veto the measures but in vain.

But little work was done on the road from 1839 to 1848, in which last named year that portion of it embraced in Indiana was surrendered to that State with all the stone and timber therein for its use. At this period it was completed as far as Terrehaute with the exception of being covered with a small quantity of stone at a few places and was nearly completed to a point west of the State line of Illinois, and partly to Alton on the Mississippi river. As a fact the whole road was finished and bridged but Congress refused to dress it with stone unless the same could be had as cheap as in Indiana which could not be done and hence in 1850 further work on the same ceased.

Through the increasing opposition of certain political leaders, who were opposed to the policy of internal improvements by the government, the death of Henry Clay the advocate and champion

of the road, and the building of railroads its further construction was stopped.

The first through stages between Baltimore and the Ohio river were organized in relays. These lodged their passengers the first night at Hagerstown, the second at Cumberland, the third at Uniontown, and the fourth at Wheeling. The stages were of the old fashioned type—open in front, with a rack behind to hold one or two trunks but persons in those days seldom travelled with such an incumbrance. The passengers faced the team on a level with the driver. Saddle bags then the usual baggage of travellers were strung around the standards which supported the roof of the vehicle. At night it was customary on reaching a lodging place for the passengers to give these into the custody of the landlord, whose wife would put them under her bed during the night and in the morning deliver them to their respective owners. It was not until 1827 that coaches running day and night crossed the Alleghenies.

The National road was the Appian way of the Republic. In its palmy days it was more like the grand avenue of some proud city, than a thoroughfare through wild and rural districts. It was famous for the number and excellence of its inns or taverns. The signboards with their golden letters winking in the sunlight ogled the passers-by from the hot and dusty roadbed giving promise of good cheer within, while the big horsetrough full of fresh, clear water lent charm to the surroundings which to the jaded teams was not only inviting but irresistible.

Twenty-five cents was the uniform price charged for warm meals, with a drink of whiskey thrown in. In the middle of the day a cold check was set out for twelve and a half cents (a levy in the old phrase) and a drink thrown in.

The Conestoga wagon a Pennsylvania enterprise was the conveyance used for the transportation of goods, merchandise, &c., of every description. "They had broad wheel tires, and the body "was generally painted a bright blue and was furnished with side "boards of an equally vivid red. They had a canvas covering "corded down at the sides and ends and usually carried from four "to six tons of freight. The rates between Philadelphia and Wheel-"ing were usually two dollars per ton. Each team consisted of "from four to six in number. It was common for each of the

"horses except the saddle horses to wear bells, and these were called "bell teams. Ten, twenty, and thirty of these wagons would follow "in procession in a close row and were constantly passing east and "west. The Conestoga wagons and wagoners were divided into "two classes—the one, called "Regulars" who made it their con- "stant and only business, and the other called the "Militia," these "latter being farmers or common teamsters who only made oc- "casional trips and drove but four horses. The Regulars carried "no food for themselves nor their horses, but both classes carried "mattresses and blankets which they spread upon the floor of the "bar room of the tavern where they put up. When the horses were "unharnessed they fed from long troughs attached to the wagon "pole." The use of these wagons continued until the opening of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad to Wheeling in 1852.

Seventy odd years ago the mails and passengers from the East were carried over the road by stages largely owned and managed by James Reeside, popularly designated as the "Land Admiral," who was perhaps the largest mail contractor in the United States. Personally he possessed a commanding physique, being six feet four and a half inches in height, without any surplus flesh, measuring fifty-three inches about the chest, and weighing two hundred and twenty pounds. He was a man of great enterprise, remarkable executive ability, strict integrity, plain and direct in speech, and free and open handed in his generosity. He was an esteemed friend of General Jackson, as well as the associate and friend of Clay, Crittenden, Benton, McLean and other distinguished men of the period.

At this time there were four rival lines of stages on the National road, known as the Good Intent, National, Pioneer, and June Bug, competitors for public patronage. The mail coach always carried a horn the mellifluous tones of which were always sounded in advance on its arriving at its stopping place, as well as in setting out from its starting point. This was the signal for the gathering of the villagers at the different relays to obtain such news as the passengers might be able or willing to communicate to the expectant crowd. A change of horses occurred every ten miles, allowing a brief time to passengers for refreshments.

In those days the stage companies spared no expense in securing the finest stock, the Consul and Maydukc breed having the preference on account of their superior qualities for endurance and swiftness.

Whatever may be said as to the original cost of this great internal improvement, popularly known as the National road, it was small compared to the benefit it was to the country at large, and it paid for itself many times over.

At the opening of the road millions of western acres were waiting for the cultivation of the plough and hoe, and billions of native wealth needed only the energy and enterprise of man to startle the world with the wonderful development of their riches. The building of this great highway set in motion and turned a vast tide of emigration to the great west whose rich plains and fertile valleys promptly responded to the labor and enterprise of the settlers. Great cities and commercial centres soon sprung into existence as if at the touch of a magician's wand and the poet's dream was realized—

"Westward the star of empire takes its way."

The "regulars," so called, who were always spoken of as wagoners—never as "teamsters," were extremely hostile to the encroachment of railroads, which were regarded by them as the invention of the Evil one. An old song, quite popular among them, run somewhat after this fashion—

"Come all ye jolly wagoners
Turn out man for man,
Who's opposed to the railroad
Or any such a plan,
When we go down to Baltimore,
And ask for a load,
They'll very soon tell you,
It's gone by railroad."

Alas, the old road has lost much of its former prestige. The old-fashioned stage coach, and the Conestoga wagon with its white cover and belled horses and its drivers are but relics of the past. The toot of the driver's horn is no longer heard and the graceful swing of his long whip is seen no more, but instead is heard the weird shriek of the locomotive as with swift wings it flies along the ringing rails.

"We mourn bereft of the post horn deft,
Blown by that famous driven,
For we only hear when the cars draw near
A screech down by the river."

FROM THE GEN. WM. IRVINE PAPERS IN THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF PENN.

Copied by O. S. Decker.

We, the subscribers, Non-Commissioned Officers, Drummers, Fifers and Privates, of a detachment from the First Virginia Regiment stationed at Fort Pitt—do in presence of Major Croghan acknowledge to have received in specie of John Pierce, Esq., Paymaster General, by the hand of John Rose, the several sums annexed to our names, being our pay for the month of January, 1783, for which we have signed duplicate receipts. Fort Pitt, July 28th, 1783.

Name.	*Rank.*	*Numb. of Dolls.*	*Cts.*
James Lane (or Low) Qr. Master Sergeant	Sergeant	$ 10	00
Alexander Fraser, Sergeant	"	10	00
John Hill, Sergeant	"	10	00
Moses Ward, Sergeant	"	10	00
Samuel Cruswell	Corporal	7	30
Edward Shephard	"	7	30
William Jones	"	7	30
Thomas McIlvane, his x mark	Drummer	7	30
John Ingles (English?)	Private	6	60
John Robinson, his x mark	"	6	60
David Clarke, his x mark	"	6	60
Jacob Beechar, his x mark	"	6	60
John Cardonas, his x mark	"	6	60
James Stackpole	"	6	60
Isaac Devore, his x mark	"	6	60
Samuel Lemon (or Leming)	"	6	60
Stephen Winters	"	6	60
John Phillips	"	6	60
Jonathan Welsh, his x mark	"	6	60
Joseph Fowler	"	6	60
Peter McCartney, his ex mark (or McCarney)	"	6	60
John Guthry (or Guttery)	"	6	60
John Shea, his x mark, (or Schlet	"	6	60
John Richardson	"	6	60

Name.	*Rank.*	*Numb. of Dolls.*	*Cts.*
James Parley (or Parlor)	"	6	60
James Becham (or Beham)	"	6	60
James Johnson	"	6	60
James Carr	"	6	60
William Overline, his x mark, (or Overlan)	"	6	60
John Barnett	"	6	60
William Brasier	"	6	60
William Woods, his x mark	"	6	60
Henry Skinner, his x mark, (or Shumer)	"	6	60
Clement Gillihan, his x mark	"	6	60
Charles Craford, his x mark, (Crawford?)	"	6	60
John Burnsides, his x mark	"	6	60
John Woodman, his x mark	"	6	60
John Spear	"	6	60
William Cloyd, his x mark, (or Clack)	"	6	60
William Connelly	"	6	60
Michael Murphy, his x mark	"	6	60
Joseph Denison	"	6	60
Joseph Wood	"	6	60
John Rock	"	6	60
Edward Walker	"	6	60
Gilbraith Willison, his x mark	"	6	60
John Bean, his x mark	"	6	60
Thomas Buite, his x mark, (or Butt)	"	6	60
Thomas Jones	"	6	60
John Rily, (or Brily)	"	6	60
John Booke	"	6	60
Patrick Thornton, his x mark	"	6	60
John Hoorish, his x mark, (or Horash)	"	6	60
John Daugherty, his x mark	"	6	60
John Morrison, his x mark	"	6	60
Isaac Halfpenny, his x mark	"	6	60
William Morton, his x mark, (or Martin)	"	6	60
William Brumaherm, his x mark, (or Brumagem)	"	6	60
Jacob Adams, his x mark, (or Adonis)	"	6	60
Samuel McCord, his x mark, (or McCoy)	"	6	60

Name.	*Rank.*	*Numb. of Dolls.*	*Cts.*
Ruben Abett, his x mark	"	6	60
Robert Bacon, his x mark	"	6	60
Charles Morgan, his x mark	"	6	60
Thomas Jackson	"	6	60
		$438	80

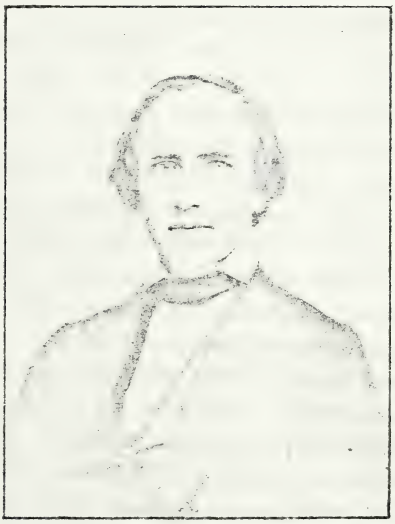
I hereby certify to have been witness to the payments, made to the non-commissioned officers and privates of late my Company, now annexed to the first Virginia Regiment as specified above.

BENJM. BIGGS,
Capt. Virga. Line.

Fort Pitt, August 2nd, 1783.

REV. JOHN CLARK BAYLESS, D. D.

By Louella K. Pogue.



REV. J. C. BAYLESS.

We are ever ready to crave for high natures a grand career, and to measure life by its earthly fulfillments. In our scheme of existence the harvest must be sure to the sower, the palm to the victor,

and sainthood must wear its halo and receive its crown before the eyes of men. Far otherwise would seem the heavenly ideal for the rounding of a life. Service without recompense, struggle without attainment, the thorn instead of the laurel,—these are more often the portion of God's royal sons on earth.

It was under many of those conditions which we call adverse, that the ministry of Dr. Bayless was accomplished. That splendid intellect, in logical grasp suggesting a kinship of mind with Paul himself;—those scholarly attainments, borne with such simple dignity, and held to account by him for full service toward God and humanity;—that mastery in dealing with questions of practical benevolence and simpler, wiser educational methods, as well as with the things pertaining to man's spiritual estate;—these gifts might well have won for him a place among those who lead the thought of a nation. But his physical self was unequal to constant strain, and often lagged behind its spiritual yoke-fellow.

Such a protest must be heeded, and economy of effort considered, or the workers term of service is brief: and this in part diverted his ministry from a city charge to the comparatively obscure field of North-Eastern Kentucky and West Virginia, with Ashland as the centre of outflow for those streams of usefulness which were to pour new energy through a thousand life-channels.

Here he was to lavish the toil of his life's best years, and here his sharpest sorrows were to be manfully met and borne.

Lingering on its mission, the message came with no less stunning force to call the wife and mother from his home. What he suffered in the loss of that noble and sustaining nature, those lips of sphinx like reticence might never tell;—but we know that in the silent depths of a soul like his there must be great capacity for suffering, and that his later sympathy with human loss and sorrows was learned at the cost of his own pain. Nor was he spared the shafts of malice, which wounded him sorely but could not slay him, conscious of his own rectitude and secure in the love and loyalty of his people. We could ill spare the ministry of those lonely years, when Dr. Bayless with utter sacrifice of self, threw heart, soul and strength into his work among us. Churches grew under his care, and schools were planted by his hand and nurtured after his wise ideals.

To the fresh inspiration given to study, and the glad, new meanings found in books, let those who were the younger generation then, bear witness today with grateful hearts:—The social life as well grew into harmony with his own standards of "plain living and high thinking." It was a simple and peaceful life, in which he held to his people an almost paternal relation, and very dear to memory are its annals.

One would pause here, turning down the leaf on that serene and pastoral existence, and reading not of war abroad in the land, state rent from state, ties the dearest severed, and God's church torn apart:—the ministry on either side the breach, the greatest sufferers. The bare record of pastoral relations broken tells but half the story. One must read between the lines to gather even in part its burden of anguish to those saintly sufferers. To turn aside from ripening harvest-fields, blackened by untimely frost;—to leave a life-work, dearer than life itself, which asks our hand no more;—to feel the iron entering into the soul, as, sick at heart, wounded and broken, the tempter accuses and mocks us with life's thwarted purpose;—who would not crave instead the fate of those who, in a sterner age, found a sharp, swift transit through the flames to glory?

The closing chapters of Dr. Bayless' life are quickly told. Rallying for a few more years of service, we find him the beloved shepherd of a scattered flock among the hills. There nature kept her faith with him, and a covenant-keeping God revealed to him His secret of consolation.

There, peace and even joy entered into his soul; and there in slow surrender to the foe that long had sought his life, his valiant, steadfast soul found release from life's long struggle.

Rest thee, true "Servant of Jesus Christ," in the sanctuary of the hills: We call no more thy ministry a broken one, for in her own way and time is Wisdom justified in her children. The passing years that bring toil and strife into our lives, still show thee to us, standing ever at Conscience' side and pointing where Duty leads, while that inexorable voice still adds its mandate: "This is the way: walk ye in it."

As a fellow-toiler, his spirit in reverent touch with thine toward the same great ends, thy follower in this field has held the trust

a sacred one. From hand to hand the work goes on, but each true ministry is none the less a living and a ceaseless one, and in the great harvest day "He that soweth and he that reapeth" shall "rejoice together."

John Clark Bayless was born in the city of Louisville, Jan. 7th, 1819. While he was very young his mother died and he was placed under the care of his grand-mother, with whom he remained until he was six or seven year old, when, she, too was taken away by death. Many years after her death he wrote, "I have often thought of her prayers in my behalf, and blessed God for them, for though I was too young when she died to appreciate her solicitude for me, yet have I not experienced their efficacy since?"

He was afforded the best educational advantages, but, being a frail youth, his school days were necessarily interrupted and broken. In May 1833 he entered the freshman class in Centre College, and graduated with honor in September, 1836. He was converted during the revival in Danville in 1835, joined the church there and was baptized by Dr. Young. He then and there made an entire consecration of himself and all he had to Christ, and determined that when his course of study was completed, he would carry the good tidings to those in the darkness of heathen lands.

He entered Princeton Seminary in June, 1837. Compelled by the condition of his health to take a season of rest, he did not complete his course until 1841. He was licensed by the Presbytery of Louisville. His ill health caused him also to relinquish his purpose of serving as a missionary. As stated supply he was in charge of the church at Cloverport, Ky., for one year. Receiving a call from Jeffersonville, Indiana, he accepted and served the church at that place for two years, and in addition to the care of the church for one year was chaplain to the Penitentiary, by appointment of Governor Samuel Biggar.

About this time he was married to Miss Rosa Lewis, a convert from Judaism to christianity. She was a typical Jewish beauty, and her character was as lovely as her features. She was indeed well fitted by nature and education to be a true helpmate in a minister's home: she was ever ready with kind words and a helping hand to assist, cheer and comfort. The youngest of five children was but two years of age when the summons came to this child of grace and she returned to her father's home.

Her tomb bears this brief and beautiful inscription, "A daughter of Abraham—A follower of Messiah,"

In 1844 or 1845 Dr. Bayless accepted the pastorate of the Presbyterian church at Covington, where he labored for about ten years, when his health compelled him to leave the city. A peculiarity of his disease was that it was much aggravated by coal smoke. In 1854, he took charge of the Bethesda church of Ashland, Kentucky. The name of this church was soon changed to the First Presbyterian Church of Ashland. His labors were not confined to one field. "Now began that great evangelistic work which ended only with his life, the results of which will be known only in eternity." The field he supplied embraced the counties of Boyd and Greenup in Kentucky and Wayne and Cabell in W. Va.

In 1856 he organized the church in Catlettsburg, and in 1859, in Greenupsburg. These with Ashland, Greenup Union, and the Western (now First Church Huntington, W. Va.) made five organized churches under his oversight, and each one was a center of mission work. He loved the mission work, to gather assemblies into their small meeting places; to address them not as a class, but as "brother men;" to meet them where as he said "should there be any doubt of an application he could reach out and placing his hand on the head say, "Thou art the man." When unable to go as was sometimes the case, to preach to them, he would write instructive articles to be read to the assemblies by some of their number. Some of these appeared in the church paper. Many persons in Ky, and W. Va. will remember the "Gable End" Letters, "Thoughts for the Thoughtful Youth," "Hints on Happiness," etc. His modesty prevented him from attaching his name to his writings, he wrote over the signature SS.

Mr. Bayless had always a deep interest in popular education. Early in his ministry in Ashland he established a small school for the benefit of his own children and the children of the immediate neighborhood. This was the foundation of Beech Grove Seminary. Under his wise, upright and efficient management the school was eminently successful, and sent out from its care students well equipped for the duties of life. Even now the magic name, Beech Grove, will cause many an eye to brighten, quicken many a heart beat in memory of Auld Lang Syne.

Dr. Bayless gave instruction in the higher branches, but the school was conducted for the most part by competent teachers employed by him. No one whose student days fell in this period can fail to recall now the impression which his instruction produced. No one who ever sat in his class room can possibly forget his clear, terse, vigorous way of handling his subject. His ability of definition was most remarkable. At one time he required the seniors to prepare a synopsis of the Sunday sermon for Monday morning devotional hour. Only those who have heard his logical, forceful sermons, his rapid delivery—the words pouring forth in a living stream—his concise style and concentrated thought, every sentence as Grattan said of Fox's oratory, breaking on you like a wave of the sea with three thousand miles of the Atlantic behind it,—can appreciate how difficult was the requirement. Relax attention for an instant and you were gone beyond recovery. After a particularly bald report he once remarked to the class, "I believe I could change my text and give you the same sermon every Sunday and you would never know it." The truth of which remark was too apparent to both pupil and preacher to be at all complimentary to either.

Dr. Bayless was relieved of the work in Greenup County in 1863. In 1865 Rev. J. D McClintock took charge of the churches in Catlettsburg and W. Va., though Dr. Bayless did much mission work in W. Va. after that time. In the families of Cabell County, especially those in the neighborhood of Marshall Academy, Dr. Bayless' name was a household word. There was not a home but had for him a "prophets chamber," a warm welcome and sincere friends. He was always asked to come again. He was revered not only by Presbyterians, but by all christians who knew anything of his work, for while no man was more attached to the distinctive principles of Presbyterianism than he, yet he loved and was loved by all the follows of Christ.

He strove to make himself useful to all men. A feeling of brotherly kindness between denominations put a sacramental seal on the friendship of preacher and people which forever consecrated and sweetened the relations and feelings toward each other. Much pleasure came to Mr. Bayless from the assurance of the love and appreciation of his loyal friends of W. Va., where it is safe to say

Dr. Bayless gave instruction in the higher branches, but the school was conducted for the most part by competent teachers employed by him. No one whose student days fell in this period can fail to recall now the impression which his instruction produced. No one who ever sat in his class room can possibly forget his clear, terse, vigorous way of handling his subject. His ability of definition was most remarkable. At one time he required the seniors to prepare a synopsis of the Sunday sermon for Monday morning devotional hour. Only those who have heard his logical, forceful sermons, his rapid delivery—the words pouring forth in a living stream—his concise style and concentrated thought, every sentence as Grattan said of Fox's oratory, breaking on you like a wave of the sea with three thousand miles of the Atlantic behind it,—can appreciate how difficult was the requirement. Relax attention for an instant and you were gone beyond recovery. After a particularly bald report he once remarked to the class, "I believe I could change my text and give you the same sermon every Sunday and you would never know it." The truth of which remark was too apparent to both pupil and preacher to be at all complimentary to either.

Dr. Bayless was relieved of the work in Greenup County in 1863. In 1865 Rev. J. D McClintock took charge of the churches in Catlettsburg and W. Va., though Dr. Bayless did much mission work in W. Va. after that time. In the families of Cabell County, especially those in the neighborhood of Marshall Academy, Dr. Bayless' name was a household word. There was not a home but had for him a "prophets chamber," a warm welcome and sincere friends. He was always asked to come again. He was revered not only by Presbyterians, but by all christians who knew anything of his work, for while no man was more attached to the distinctive principles of Presbyterianism than he, yet he loved and was loved by all the follows of Christ.

He strove to make himself useful to all men. A feeling of brotherly kindness between denominations put a sacramental seal on the friendship of preacher and people which forever consecrated and sweetened the relations and feelings toward each other. Much pleasure came to Mr. Bayless from the assurance of the love and appreciation of his loyal friends of W. Va., where it is safe to say

his memory will be venerated as long as God spares the lives of those who knew him. The entire community would bear testimony to his christian character and usefulness.

In 1866, Dr. Bayless severed his connection with the Ashland Church. His health during an active and useful ministry of thirty four years was never good. In 1867, hoping that his health would be benefitted thereby, he moved to his farm in Carter County, occupying a house on the first bench of the mountain, and calling his home "Montane." Later he moved much higher up the mountain, naming this home "Altior." By his own request, when he went to dwell in his Father's House, his body was laid to rest on the highest point of the mountain, towering for above "Altior," which he called "Altissimus." A marble slab bears this inscription: John Clark Bayless, a servant of Jesus Christ, born Jan. 7th, 1819, Died May 23rd, 1875. "Resurgam." His life motto was Jehovah jireh.

Dr. Bayless was a man of extraordinary intellect and fine scholarship, he was all of his life a diligent student. He is a striking figure in the religious and educational history of Eastern Ky. and W. Va. His personality was as as great a power as his words, and was the source of an attraction which has been felt by all those with whom he came in contact. He was reticent and to those who did not know him intimately he seemed stern. One who was his pupil for a short time writes, "In my school days I always stood in awe of Mr. Bayless. I came late and never grew into that close intimacy which was the privileges of my classmates, but the experiences and reflections of my maturer years have seemed to deepen and intensify my appreciation of his noble christian life and character."

He was loved by those who knew him best: they dwelt in the warmth of his good fellowship, they delighted in his keen wit, and in his quick appreciation of the humorous side of things. His wonderful fund of information, his broad reading, his power of analysis, his faculty of logical reasoning was exhibited to those who stood in the inner side of his friendship.

He was a wonderful master of simple and powerful language. His conversational powers were remarkable: he was always instructive. He was, too, a man of refined and ready wit. Presbyterianism and wit were his by birthright from his Scotch-Irish

ancestry. His daughter says, "There was rarely a day that I was with him that he did not "punctuate the day" with some bright and witty saying. When my first boy was born, father came to see me the third day afterward. I said to him "How long must I wait before I begin to train this boy?" "If you have not already begun you have lost three days." On an another occasion when I was rebelling against my duty and discussing the results pro and con, he remarked, "Duty is ours, consequences, God's."

What distinguished him above everything else was his humble, childlike piety. He possessed, pre-eminently, courage, a quick, lofty sense of honor and a power of sympathy which evoked the full energy of his being against injustice, meanness and untruth. Truth to him was real, vital, imperative, commanding his allegiance and advocacy: with his loyalty to it and his sense of human need, he could not stand before his fellow men and recite smooth homilies or merely parade discourses. There was something striking in the form in which truth was presented in every sermon. A profound generalization was enforced with a felicity of language and naturalness illustration, which in its appeal to the human heart, found there its adequate confirmation. As a preacher he was possessed of exceptional powers. His sermons were not written in full, and many of his strongest passages were conceived in the fervor of delivery. His mind was so clear and his power of analysis so keen, that he could discuss the profoundest truths without looseness or inaccuracy. He had a wonderful insight into the truth and a grasp of the relation of a part to the whole.

Any sketch of Dr. Bayless' life and work which fails to mention his effort to reach the children of his people and lead them into the fold of the Good Shepherd, would be greatly defective. In his love for the little ones he showed the spirit of his Master, and was never more happy than when pointing them to Him. In this work he was eminently successful, and many devout followers of Christ yet live to bless his name for the influence of his teaching, which showed them a better way. In this department he did faithful and fruitful work.

An aged elder and long time friend of Dr. Bayless says:

It affords me great pleasure to add a slight testimonial to the memory of a great man; not great in a worldly sense, but great

because he was good and who, although dead, his works live after him.

To know him was to love him for his many noble qualities of head and heart. Small in statute, physically not strong, yet intellectually a giant he devoted his talent to the cause of his master until he was called to his reward.

Dr. Bayless was gifted with fine practical sense, was reserved in his intercourse with men, especially strangers, but with his friends in the social circle he was pleasant and agreeable and at all times a most welcome visitor to the homes of his people and neighbors.

He felt a special interest in the training and welfare of children, and during the latter part of his life while physically able his time was largely devoted to their interests, and now after the lapse of years persons grown to manhood and womanhood who when children had received the benefit of Dr. Bayless' christian teaching will speak in terms of the most earnest love and affection of their departed friend.

As an expounder of bible truth Dr. Bayless had few superiors. His manner in the pulpit was cool and unembarrassed: he never indulged in rhetorical display. He had the happy faculty in his illustration of christian doctrine to please the most highly educated hearer as well as to reach the understanding of the uneducated among the people.

He had no patience with spread eagle oratory in the pulpit. I may be pardoned for referring to a most interesting scene witnessed at a meeting of Presbytery. The Dr. was in attendance and very shortly after Presbytery was organized it was understood that he was to preach the Sunday morning sermon. Sunday came: the weather was fine and many persons who had heard of but had never heard him preach were present. The church was crowded. When the Dr. arose to open the services a shade of disappointment was manifest on the faces of some of those who had never seen him; upon the faces of others significant smiles were seen, the meaning of which was easily understood, but smiles and disappointment soon vanished from their faces when he announced his text in one word, "Heaven." Silence reigned over the house: that single word caught the attention of his hearers and he held it without the interruption of the slightest sound for an hour. His brethren of

the clergy, many of them highly gifted men, as well as his entire audience were thrilled with delight as he unfolded to them, in a plain conversational manner, the glory of the home of the redeemed.

It would be impossible for me to describe the suppressed feeling of happiness pervading the congregation as the Dr. closed his sermon. The "Little Man of the Mountains" made a most profound impression upon his hearers.

He was a man of broad christian charity and his many charitable acts in relieving the needy and distressed were unostentatiously performed, and were known only by the recipients of his bounty.

In conclusion I can truly say that the memory of Dr. Bayliss is fondly cherished by friends who knew and loved him for his many christian virtues for which he was so greatly esteemed by those who knew him best.

For help in the preparation of this article thanks are due Mrs. Helen Bayless Landsdowne, Cincinnati, Ohio; Mrs. Helen Ida McCoy, Peoria, Ill.; Miss Mary H. Hilton, Ashland, Ky.; Col. D. K. Weis, Ashland, Ky.

"Entered May 19, 1903, at Charleston, West Virginia, as Second Class matter, under Act of Congress of July 16, 1894."

Vol. 3. JULY, 1903. No. 3.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine Quarterly,

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year, - - - - - - - - - $1.00
SINGLE COPIES, - - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

THE TRIBUNE PRINTING COMPANY,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS FOR JULY, 1903.

James Rumsey and Family.....*W. S. Laidley*
Morrow Family.....*W. S. Laidley*
Skiles Family.....*W. S. Laidley*
Barns Family.....*W. S. Laidley*
Morris Family.....*W. S. Laidley*

Col. Moses Shepherd.....*Mrs. Harriet McIntyre Foster*
Lydia Boggs.....*Mrs. Harriet McIntyre Foster*
Gen'l Daniel Kruger.....*Mrs. Harriet McIntyre Foster*

Capture of Generals Crook and Kelley.....*W. S. Laidley*
The Van Bibbers.....*Mrs. M. W. Donnally*
Change of Calendars.....*W. S. Laidley*
Judge Lewis Summers.....*Mrs. Ann I. Ryon*

Large Land Owners.....*W. S. Laidley*
Washington as a Land Owner.....*W. S. Laidley*
Kanawha Land Books, 1797.....*W. S. Laidley*
Washington, a Salt Maker, etc.....*W. S. Laidley*

Students from Virginia at Athens, O.....*Miss Julia Barber*
Change of Names of Towns in West Virginia.....*W. S. Laidley*
Rev. M. D. Dunlap.....*Rev. W. T. Price*
Corrections, etc.

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

JAMES RUMSEY,

THE INVENTOR OF THE STEAMBOAT.

We are able through the courtesy of G. A. Rumsey, of Salem, N. J., to give a picture of James Rumsey. This photograph was taken from a portrait painted by Benjamin West, London, 1790, and the original is now in the possession of Mr. Rumsey of New Jersey.

JAS. RUMSEY.

Having the pleasure to give to our readers a look at this famous inventor that lived in Shepherdstown, W. Va., it will not be out of place to give some facts concerning him, even at the risk of repeating some that we have heretofore published.

In 1900 this society published a paper prepared by Geo. M. Beltzhoover, Jr., entitled "James Rumsey, the Inventor of the Steamboat."—In 1901, in January number of this magazine, there was published an article on "The Inventor of the Steamboat" by Hon. D. B. Lucas, and in the same number of said Magazine, Dr. John P. Hale wrote "Rumsey *vs.* Fulton."

It is not a question whether he was *one of the* inventors, for there seems to have been more than one, but whether he was *the* inventor: the first one whose invention was proved by actual test.

The only person whose claim appears to have been a rival, was John Fitch, of Pennsylvania.

From what has been written of the latter's claim, it seems he stated that the first time the idea came to him was in April, 1785. He had not perfected his invention in October, 1787, but then he obtained from Virginia Assembly the right to navigate the waters of Virginia.—See 12, Hen. Stat. 616, Oct., 1787.

It only remains for us to show that James Rumsey's invention was prior to the time that Fitch had his vision of a steamboat.

James Rumsey settled at Berkeley Springs in 1783, and in the summer of that year he made known his invention to others. Berkeley Springs was then known as Bath, and was in Berkeley County, and was then a public resort.

John Wilson, of Philadelphia, testified that in 1783, while at these Springs he was told of Rumsey's invention. Rumsey filed his petition in the fall of 1783, with the Assembly of Maryland, which was read and referred to next session. Geo. Washington wrote that he had been convinced by Rumsey's model that boats could be propelled by his invention; this was while at said Springs in Sept., 1784. In October, 1784, the Virginia Assembly passed an Act giving to Rumsey the right to navigate the waters of that State. 11 Hen. Stat. 502. In 1785, Rumsey was at work in his shop on his machinery. In 1786, he gave private tests of his boat. In 1787 he made a public test at Shepherdstown, which was a success.

Of these facts there can be no question.

And we are willing to submit the question of priority to the jury without argument.

There is one circumstance which we do not understand. The Virginia Assembly granted the exclusive right to Rumsey for the

period of ten years, in October, 1784, but retained the right to abrogate the privilege by the payment to Rumsey of ten thousand pounds. In October, 1787, the said Assembly gave the same privilege to John Fitch, without mentioning Rumsey or their former Act. And this was just about the time that Rumsey gave his public exhibition of his boat at Shepherdstown.

Who can explain this action of the Virginia Assembly?

It needs explanation.

RUMSEY FAMILY.

The family became quite a numerous one, as some families do in the course of time. We shall give only that part of the genealogy that bears on the inventor.

Charles Rumsey came from Wales in 1665, and settled at the head of Bohemia river, in Cecil Co., Maryland. He married Catherine ———, Sept. 26, 1675. She died in 1710. Their children were: Prudence, born 1679; Margaret, 1682; Grace, 1685; Elizabeth, 1687; Mary, 1692; Charles, Jr., 1695; William, 1698; Edward, 1703.

Edward married Miss Douglas, from Scotland, and their children were: *Edward, Jr.,* Charles, Margaret, Susan and Mary.

Edward, Jr., married Anna Cowman, or Maryland, and their children were Charles, *James*, and Edward the 3rd. *James Rumsey* was born in 1742-3 and died in 1792. The exact dates according to our calendar, are March, 1743, and died Dec. 21, 1792, in London. He married a Miss Morrow, and their children were, James, Jr., Susan and Clarissa.

James, Jr., through disease, became deaf and dumb.

Susan married, first Mr. Fraley and second Jacob Skiles.

Clarissa married Geo. D. Minor, of Bowling Green, Ky.

Not much is known of James Rumsey in his young days. He was a volunteer in the Revolutionary Army, and in 1783, he was in business as merchant in Berkeley Co., Va., and in 1784 was keeping a boarding house at the springs.

At what time he removed to Shepherdstown we know not. He left home in 1788 and went to Europe, and while in London, died suddenly December 21, 1792, and was buried at St. Margarets.

MORROW FAMILY.

This family is generally spoken of as the "Three Morrows," brothers, who lived in Shepherdstown.

Charles Morrow seems to have taken an interest in the steamboat and assisted Rumsey in his experiments.

John Morrow was President of the Board of Trustees for the town of Shepherdstown in 1796. He was the Executor of the will of Robt. Rutherford. He purchased War claims for services in the on the Ohio river. One of them was Governor of Ohio, and one a member of Congress.

The daughter of James Rumsey, Susan, married Mr. Fraley. She was left a widow, and she afetrwards married Jacob Skiles, of Greenbrier Co.

SKILES FAMILY.

Jacob was the son of Henry Skiles, of Lancaster, Pa., and Jacob had brothers, William and Henry, and sisters, Mrs. Vixey and Mrs. Hannah.

Jacob, with others, started down the Ohio river with goods; they were captured by the Indians. Of his comrades, John May was killed; Skiles was wounded; Mr. Flynn and two girls were also on the boat and were also taken prisoners. Flynn was burned at the stake. The girls were ransomed by French traders. Skiles was taken to the Miami of the Lakes. He was blackened preparatory to being burned, he feigned sickness and secured a postponement of the ordeal, and through the help of a squaw made his escape, and made his way back home. He went to Greenbrier Co., Va., and there married Mrs. Fraley, and in 1803 he removed to Bowling Green, Ky. They had four children, James Rumsey Skiles, W. H. Skiles, Chas. M. Skiles, and Elizabeth Rumsey Skiles. He died in 1816.

Jacob Skiles was a large land owner, and part thereof was in Kanawha County, viz., Patent for 32,097 acres on Gauley and 40,000 acres on Kelly's creek, and other tracts in Greenbrier County.

Jas. Rumsey Skiles was born in 1800, married Miss Bell of Tennessee, was prominent in all public matters in Kentucky, was a member of the Legislature, president of the first railroad in Ken-

tucky, president of a Bank, etc. In 1855 he removed to Texas and died in 1886. It was through him that the Portrait of James Rumsey was obtained.

BARNES FAMILY.

James Rumsey had a brother-in-law, Joseph Barns, who was a carpenter and who made the boats for Rumsey. Joseph had a daughter, Polly Barns, whose mother was a sister of James Rumsey. Joseph Barns, it is said, went to London to look after Rumsey's affairs after his death, and was never heard from afterwards. Polly Barns was raised by one of the Morrows, and she married William Morris.

MORRIS FAMILY.

William Morris, son of William, of London, married Catherine Carroll, a daughter of William Carrol, of Ireland, May 10, 1768. Their children were, viz.:

Jane, born Nov. 3, 1770, married John Hansford.
Gabriel, born Dec. 27, 1772.
William, born Dec. 16, 1775, married Polly Barns.
Catherine, born Jan. 15, 1778, married Chas. Venable, 1800.
Carroll, born Nov. 2, 1779.
John, born Aug. 24, 1783.
Cynthia, born Jan. 5, 1792, married Isaac Noyes.

William Morris, Sr., lived on Greenbrier, where Alderson now is, and the probabilities are that his son William met Polly at Jacob Skiles. After they married, they all moved to the Kanawha Valley and are buried at the mouth of Kelly's Creek.

The Hansfords, Morrises, Venables, Noyes, were the early settlers of the Kanawha Valley and their descendants are and have always been among the best people of the Kanawha Valley.

Is it not rather strange that the Potomac and Kanawha should have been so connected through the Rumsey family and their kindred?

To-day the best boat on the Kanawha river, has been named the James Rumsey, an improvement on steamboats almost as great as

Rumseys on all other boats. Mr. Charles Ward is the inventor and builder of the new boat.

We regret to announce that the Legislature of West Virginia failed to appropriate a fund for a monument for James Rumsey. It will come however, sooner or later.

W. S. LAIDLEY.

COLONEL MOSES SHEPHERD.

MRS. HARRIET MCINTYRE FOSTER.

On a hill at Elm Grove, near Wheeling, West Virginia, stands a quaint and ancient stone church. It is surrounded by a cemetery that contains a handsome, imposing monument bearing the following inscription:

"Sic Transit Gloria Mundi.

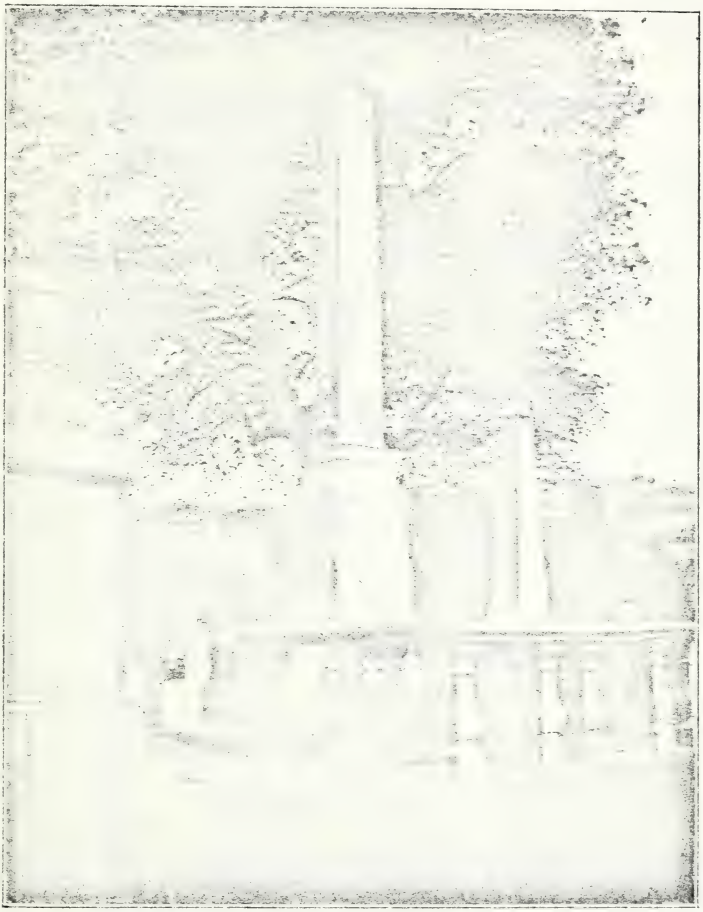
"Sacred to the memory of Colonel Moses Shepherd who departed "this life April 29th, 1832, in the 69th year of his age.

" To him the country owes a large debt of gratitude as well for "his defense of it, when a frontier settlement, as for his recent "public services in aiding the extension and construction of the "Cumberland Road through Virginia."

The second inscription is as follows:—

"Sic Transit Gloria Mundi.

"Sacred to the memory of General Daniel Cruger who died July "12, 1843, in the 64th year of his age."



SHEPHERD MONUMENT.

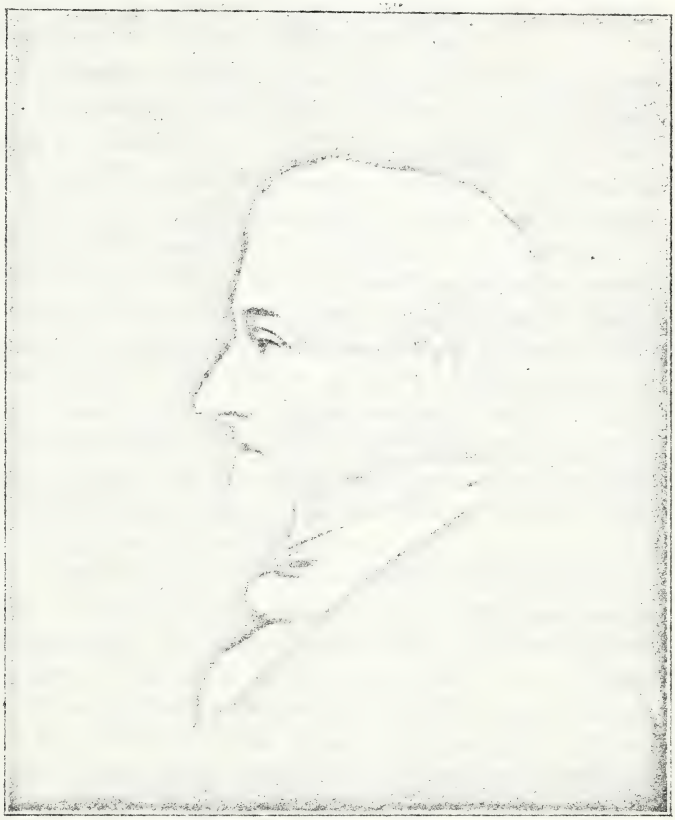
The following inscription was placed upon the monument many years later:—

"Sic Transit Gloria Mundi.

"Lydia S. Cruger, wife of General Daniel Cruger, formerly Ly-

"dia Boggs, first married to Colonel Moses Shepherd: Born Feb. "26, 1766, Died Sept. 26th, 1867, in the 102nd year of her age.

High up on the granite shaft is chiseled on two sides the picture of a log cabin, at the door appears a woman in a sitting posture with a dog in repose at her feet, while in the background is seen a martial group with the branches of a Palm-tree over-hanging the whole design.



COL. MOSES SHEPHERD.

The inscriptions on this monument write the names of three historic personages whose very remarkable lives extend over a space of time that includes the Indian War, the Colonial Period, the War of the American Revolution, the War of 1812, the Mexican War and the Civil War.

Colonel Shepherd and General Cruger, although distinguished men of national fame are now chiefly remembered as the husbands of an extraordinary woman of unusual talent, character, opportunity, social position, influence and wealth.

The history of these personages, ante-dating the foundation of our Republic, and the life of one of them extending from the Indian wars through the crisis of the Civil War, are so closely connected with many of the chief events of American history that a volume could not adequately do justice to their memories.

Only a very imperfect sketch can be given of the two men who were united by a sacred tie to the woman of whom it might be said: She was history personified.

The writer has been impelled to attempt this sketch as a continuation of the Shepherd family history and with the hope that others may be stimulated to contribute facts unknown to the writer.

If the various monuments in existence to-day, although marred by time, are accepted as evidence, Colonel Moses Shepherd was a refined, cultured and progressive gentleman, far in advance of the period in which he lived. His picture as given in this article is a visible proof of these statements. The monuments erected by him are the graceful stone bridges over which the National road passes; the picturesque sun-dial with its choice inscription; the Shepherd monument; and most interesting of all, the stately Colonial stone mansion built on the site of Fort Shepherd.

Few men of to-day leave as many memorials of their public spirit, yet through the irony of fate some of these very monuments which should perpetuate the memory and deeds of Colonel Moses Shepherd are, through the lapse of time now known by the name of his successor, General Daniel Cruger, whose public career belongs to the State of New York, but who through his marriage to Moses Shepherd's widow, Lydia Boggs, became for a short time a resident of Wheeling, and gave his name to the widow and her possessions.

There is much of Moses Shepherd's life that is unknown to the writer but the following sketch will prove him to have been a public character of great influence. He was the fifth in descent of his family to take a prominent part in the warfare, defense and growth of the Virginia frontier. He was the great-great-grandson of Jan VanMetre "the Indian trader," the first white man to cross the

Blue Ridge; great grandson of John Van Metre, called "John the first of Berkeley," who with his brother Isaac received the grant of forty thousand acres of land from Governor Gooch in 1730; the grandson of Captain Thomas Shepherd, the founder of Shepherdstown; and the son and comrade of Colonel David Shepherd, commandant of Forts Henry and Shepherd, and County Lieutenant of Ohio County, and Colonel of Virginia Militia. (For full accounts of all the above mentioned see previous numbers of WEST VA. HIST. MAG.)

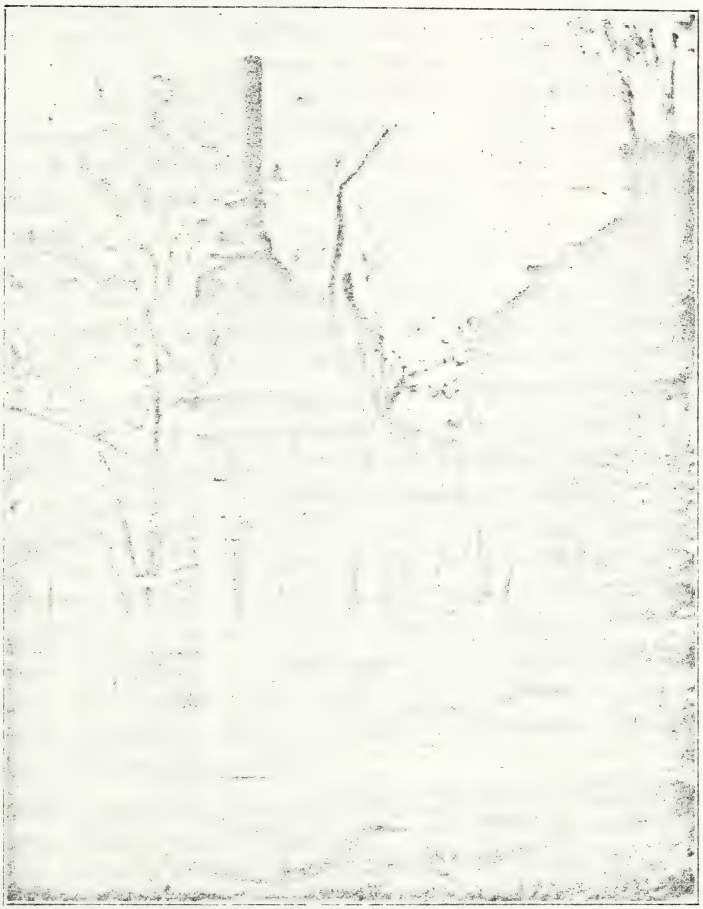
Moses Shepherd proved himself a worthy descendant of these courageous pioneers. He was the youngest son of Col. David Shepherd and Rachel Teague. He was born in Shepherdstown November 11, 1763. His only brother was killed at the siege of Fort Henry September 1, 1777. Moses Shepherd had three sisters, Elizabeth, Sarah and Ruth. Elizabeth, the eldest, married Major William McIntire, the paymaster of Forts Shepherd and Henry. They had eight children. The eldest David Mac Intire of whom the Shepherd records state he was of Ohio county, state of Virginia, living West of Carvel Hill and resides on Big Wheeling." The second son William was one of the witnesses of his grandfather's will. Joseph, the third son, received a grant of land near Columbus, Ohio, where he lived and raised a family, one of whom was the Rev. Dr. Thomas MacIntire, an educator of the deaf and dumb of national reputation.

Major William McIntire received two warrants of land issued Dec. 2, 1783, for three years services in the Continental line. See Warrants No. 2005 and 2006 in Virginia Military Records.

William McIntire was killed by the Indians of Tecumseh's band while on an expedition with Simon Kenton against the Miami Indians, near Limestone, now Maysville, Ky., March, 1792. He was taken prisoner, tied to a stake, tortured and scalped. Elizabeth Shepherd McIntire afterwards married John Lee and had one son Thomas Lee.

The second sister of Moses Shepherd was Sarah, who married Francis Duke, who was killed at Fort Henry Sept. 1, 1777. (For full account see Jan. No. W. VA. HIST. MAG.) Sarah had two sons by Francis Duke. John who was three years old at the time of his father's tragic death; the second son Francis was a posthumous

child. Sarah married a second time, Levi Springer, by whom she had a large family. The youngest sister was Ruth who married John Mills, one of the executors of David Shepherd's will. They had ten children. Moses Shepherd and Lydia Boggs had no child-



SHEPHERD SUN DIAL.

ren. The sisters and their marriages are given in this article because they and their children were the heirs to that part of Moses' estate which he inherited from his father and which was left in Moses' will to his wife for her life-time. After her death it was to be divided between his sisters or their heirs. The remarkably long

life of his wife prevented the property from being inherited by any of the direct heirs. Grand children and great grandchildren of the three sisters finally inherited the estate which was settled by a celebrated law suit.

Moses was seven or eight years old when his father moved his large family to the plantation lying between Big Wheeling and Little Wheeling, and extending beyond Middle Wheeling Creek. On a beautiful site near the bank of Big Wheeling was built Fort Shepherd by Colonel David Shepherd. This fort became the neighborhood refuge. Moses became skilled in all the lore of woodcraft familiar with the Indians and an expert hunter. He also aided his father in all the occupations of a planter and in running the large mill that was a very important part of a pioneer's life. After seven years of this prosperous, happy, free life there was an unexpected uprising of the Indians incited by the British. Fort Shepherd was entirely destroyed by the Indians and only the mill spared as it afforded them much amusement to make the great wheel run.

When Colonel Shepherd was ordered by General Hand to take command of Fort Henry, he removed his large family there including the husbands of his daughters and their children. Moses courageously played the part of a man. Even the women and girls shared in the work of defending the Fort, loaded the guns for the men, made ammunition and burned their hands with hot bullets. In this siege the women bore as important and almost as dangerous a part as the men. Lydia Boggs was also in the fort and was as brave and helpful as the others. This frightful experience in the fort was probably one of the bonds that later drew Moses Shepherd and Lydia Boggs together.

After the siege Moses went with his father's family to Catfish Camp, where they remained five years. During these years Moses made frequent visits to the plantation and assisted in restoring the buildings, including a larger, stronger and more commodious Fort Shepherd. For a description of the new fort see DeHaas. Moses enlisted in Captain Lewis Bonnet's company of militia which was organized for protection against the Indians. He became the trusted agent and messenger to purchase arms, ammunition and supplies for the two forts of which his father, as County Lieutenant, had command.

The following are proofs:

"I hereby certify that Moses Shepherd was employed to bring the arms and ammunition from Morgantown to Ohio county, and hath done the same agreeable to the within account.

Given under my hand and seal, 9th day of November, 1778.

DAVID SHEPHERD.
County Lieutenant."

Also the following account:

"For building a boat and bringing the arms and ammunition from Morgantown to Ohio Co.

£ 10.00
3 days wagonage 2.15
Planks 2.00
———————.
£ 14.15

MOSES SHEPHERD."

August 13, 1788.

There are many letters and records left by his father, by his uncle Abraham and his own accounts of his journeys to Morgantown, Shepherdstown and Williamsburg on important business connected with the U. S. Government and the War of the American Revolution.

Moses Shepherd became a land-owner in his own right as the following record shows:

"We, the Commissioners, for adjusting the claims of unpatented lands in the counties of Monongahala, Yohogania, and Ohio do hereby certify that Moses Shepherd is entitled to four hundred acres of land in Monongahala county by right of residence on a small stream by the Ohio river about two miles below Bull Creek to include all the improvements.

Given under our hands at Monongahala Court House from this 29th day of March, 1783.

JOHN P. DUVALL.
JAMES NEAL.
WM. T. HAYMOND."

HEDGMAN TRIPLETT, *Clk of Court.*

From his early youth to the close of his life, Moses Shepherd performed faithfully and courageously all the duties of a frontier pioneer, soldier and planter.

After his father's death in 1795, as executor he settled the estate. In 1798 he built upon the site of Fort Shepherd the handsome stone mansion now historic, called variously "the Shepherd Mansion," "The Stone House" and now "Monument Place."

CLAY MONUMENT.

The last and perhaps the most important public work of Moses Shepherd's life was his connection with the building of the great highway which was to rival the classic Appian Way and bind the East to the West, the celebrated Cumberland Road, now called the

National Road. This National Road is the only highway of its kind ever wholly constructed by the United States Government. It extends from Cumberland, Maryland, to St. Louis. The inception originated in 1806, during Jefferson's Presidency. Until the railroads were extended beyond the Allegheny Mountains this was the one great highway from East to West. Most of the great men of our country of that period passed over this road. Jackson, Harrison, Clay, General Houston, Polk, Taylor, Benton, and many more. All made a point of stopping at the "Shepherd Mansion."

Great fortunes and reputations were made by the builders of the National Road. Colonel Moses Shepherd was one of these men. He constructed many miles of this famous old road and several of the stone bridges. Henry Clay was the chief advocate in Congress for securing funds for building the road, which was the bond of sympathy that united Henry Clay and Colonel Shepherd in a firm friendship.

Near the ancient Shepherd mansion stands a time-worn monument to Henry Clay. This monument was erected by Moses and Lydia Shepherd through an inspiration of friendship and admiration for Henry Clay and to commemorate his distinguished public services on behalf of the National Road. The monument is of free stone, twenty feet high, surmounted by a figure of the Goddess of Liberty, now almost obliterated by time and weather. There were originally inscriptions on all four sides, now all are illegible. On one side was the following inscription:—

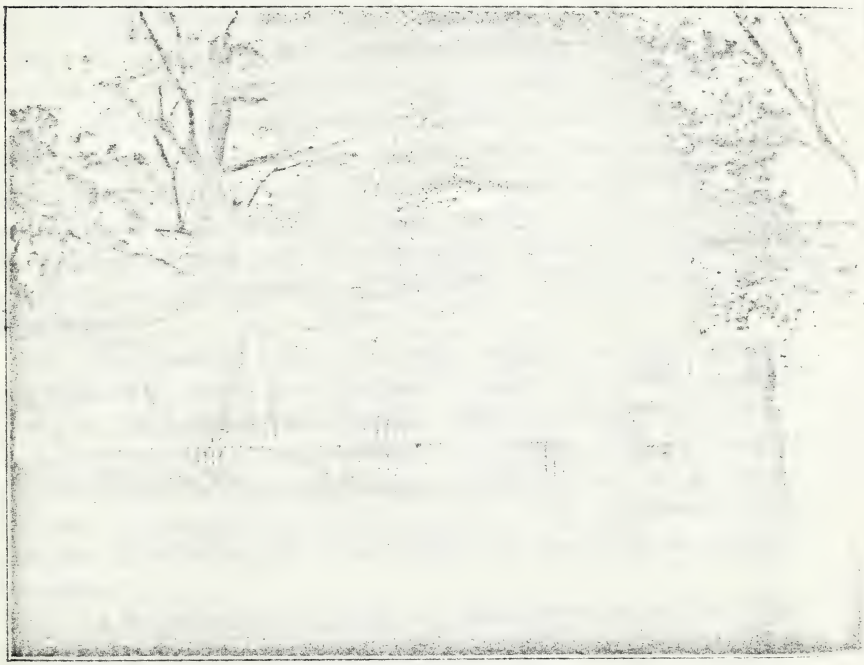
"Time will bring every amelioration and refinement most gratifying to rational man and the humblest flower freely plucked under the shelter of the tree of liberty is more to be desired than all the trappings of royalty. 44th year of American Independence, Anno Domini, 1820."

Alexander Ramsay, of Washington, and John Arey, of Clayville, executed the monument.

For many years it was the custom of Colonel Moses Shepherd to go every winter to Washington City to attend the meetings of Congress, in order to settle many claims in connection with the National Road. He was always accompanied by his wife, and traveled in great state in a coach and four.

Colonel Moses Shepherd died April 29th, 1832, in the 69th year of his age. He was buried in the Shepherd family lot, in the graveyard of the old stone church on the hill, which had been bequeathed by his father.

His grave is marked by the large Shepherd monument, which bears the inscriptions quoted at the beginning of this sketch. His wife survived him thirty-five years and, although married again, enjoyed possession of the Shepherd estate as long as she lived.



OLD STONE CHURCH.

Colonel Shepherd's will is as follows:—

In the name of God amen.

I Moses Shepherd of Ohio County in the State of Virginia do make and constitute this my last will and testament in manner and form following, that is to say.

1st. I will and direct that all my just debts be paid.

2nd. I will and bequeath to my wife my lands lying above big

Wheeling Creek and adjoining the same and little Wheeling Creek; being divided from the estate on which I now live, by both the said creeks; and together with the improvements thereon, including the grist and sawmills & the tavernhouse now occupied by Mrs. Gooding, to have and to hold the same with the appurtenances to her and her heirs and assigns forever.

3rd. All the household and kitchen furniture remaining in my possession, at the time of my decease, I devise and bequeath to my said wife and her assigns.

4th. My negro man Jack and his wife Susan and their family, children and other descendants I give to my wife & her assigns.

5th. All my other lands except the home plantation, including those I claim in a suit with the persons of the name of Lame and those I claim in a suit with person of the name of Richelce, if recovered, I devise to be sold and the proceeds thereof together with the proceeds of such part of my personal estate as she may think proper to sell after payment of just debts, to be by her vested in Bank Stock.

6th. And whereas I have sold some lands I have not conveyed and on some of which the whole, and on some part, of the purchase money is due, I do therefore, hereby authorize and empower my executrix to execute all such contracts to all interest and purposes as I do if in life, and if any such lands should fall back to my estate for want of payment by or without suit. I do devise and direct that they be sold and the proceeds after of just debts be vested as aforesaid.

7th. I do devise and bequeath my home estate on which I now live, for and during her natural life, the same being the estate lying between the forks of Wheeling Creek.

8th. After the payment of just debts when the proceeds of the sale aforesaid and of the sale of such personal estate as my executrix may dispose of, shall be vested as above, and also the proceeds of the sale of all my slaves except those above mentioned, which I hereby direct to be made and vested as aforesaid, I give and bequeath the same to my said wife together with the use of dividend or profits of all the monies aforesaid so to be vested—to hold the same so to be vested to her and her assigns.

9th. After the death of my said wife my will is that my said

home plantation or estate be sold and the proceeds of such sale to be equally divided between the children of my sisters Elizabeth McIntire Lee, Ruth Mills, and Sarah Springer, so that if any of them be dead the issue of such decease are to take part of his, her, or their parcel.

Hereby revoking all others, I do make ordain, publish and declare this to be my only last will and testament and I do appoint my said wife Lydia Shepherd to be the whole and sole executrix thereof and do declare that she shall not, by the court be held to give security. Witness my hand and seal this first day of January 1830.

MOSES SHEPHERD. (Seal.)

Signed, sealed, published and declared in presence of us.

ARCHIE WOOD. JOHN GOOD.

JOHN CARTER. THOS. THORNBURGH.

A copy Teste.

Only a very brief sketch can be given of the wife of Colonel Moses Shepherd—Lydia Boggs. She was a remarkable woman for many reasons, chiefly for the great length of her life, which extended from the Colonial period through the Civil War.

Lydia Boggs, daughter of Captain John Boggs, was born in Berkeley county, Virginia, February 26, 1766. Captain Boggs was living at Chartiers Creek, Western Pennsylvania, previous to 1774. In that year he removed with his family to the vicinity of Wheeling. He was the intimate friend and associate of Colonel David Shepherd and when Fort Henry was besieged by the Indians, September 1, 1777, Captain Boggs, who was stationed at Catfish Camp (now Washington, Pa.), twenty-five miles from Wheeling, went to the rescue with forty men, arriving there the following morning and assisted in restoring order, burying the dead and preparing for the further defence of the fort.

Captain Boggs was Sheriff of Ohio county, 1790-1797, and was one of the magistrates of Ohio county in 1785. His son William eighteen months later. In July, 1781, Captain Boggs lived on Buffalo Creek, but returned the following year to Wheeling. His was captured by the Indians in 1781, but escaped and returned home daughter Lydia accompanied him in all of these removals, was with him in the siege of Fort Henry, and as her father was in command at Fort Henry during the second siege, she was also present then and did her part in assisting in the defense, in molding bullets,

making ammunition and relieving the weary soldiers. She remembered perfectly when her father was in command of Catfish Camp, of seeing Lord Dunmore and his army when they stopped at Catfish Camp. Moses Shepherd was also at the same place, therefore their

LYDIA (BOGGS-SHEPHERD) CRUGER.
1766—1867.

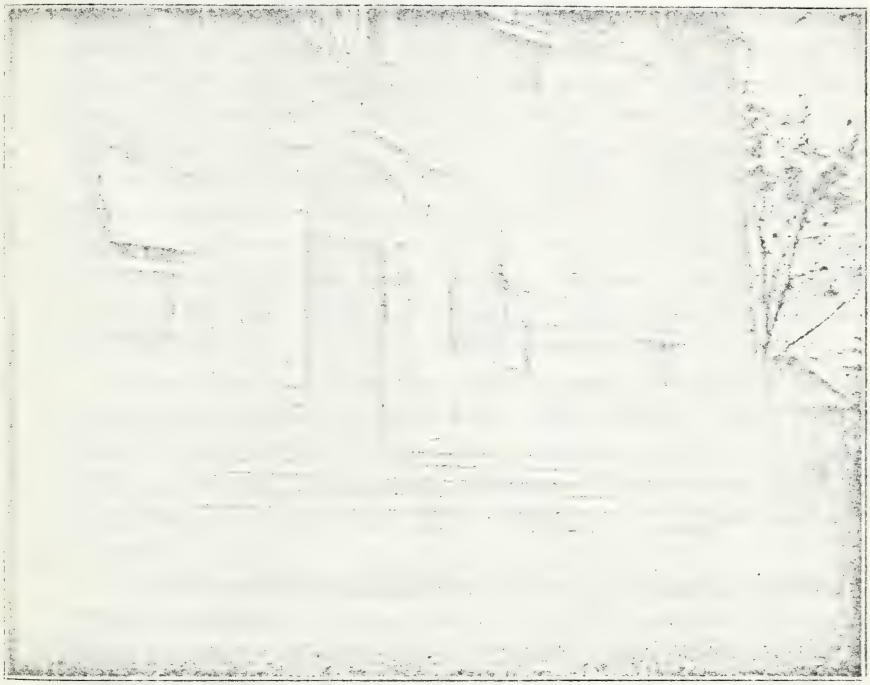
acquaintance began very early in their lives. After her marriage to Colonel Shepherd she accompanied him on his various expeditions, and his interests were hers until his death in 1832.

During Mrs. Shepherd's frequent visits to Washington she met

General Cruger, a member of Congress from New York State. They were married in 1833. As little is known of General Cruger, the following account is condensed from his life in "The Families of Wyoming":

The ancestors of General Cruger were Huguenots, who at the massacre of St. Bartholomew escaped from France. Some of them reached England in safety, while others fled to Germany and founded a home at Altonia, in the Duchy of Hilstein, and others fled to Denmark. The branch from which Mr. Cruger was descended settled in Holstein. His father emigrated to America in 1768 and settled in Sunbury, Pa., where on December 22, 1780, Daniel was born. Soon after the birth of his son, the elder Cruger removed to Newton, near Elmira, New York, and engaged in the mercantile business. When a young man Daniel Cruger went to Albany and learned the printer's trade. Afterwards he settled at Oswego, New York, and established the Oswego Democrat, which was the first journal ever published in that part of the State. He edited and published this paper until 1804, when he sold his interest in the business. His father having previously settled in Bath, New York, Daniel now made that village his home. For a time he pursued his occupation there, but the business proving injurious to his health, he gave it up and entered the office of General S. S. Haight as a student of law, with whom he continued until admitted to the bar, when he became a partner of the General. His ability as a lawyer soon exhibited itself and he became within a few years after the commencement of his practice one of the leading lawyers of the Steuben county bar. He continued to practice with increasing success until the year 1812, when the war with England broke out. General Cruger enlisted and accepted a position on the staff of General McClure, with the rank of Major and occupied a prominent position in the field during the war. He was a member of the New York Legislature during 1813, 1814 and 1815, and during the last year he was elected Speaker of the Assembly over Jacob R. Van Renssalaer, the Federal candidate. In 1816 he was elected to Congress from what was the 20th District, and during his term served with credit as a member of the Judiciary Committee, and made several speeches from the floor of the House, which won for him the respect and considration of his fellow-members. He was also the

District Attorney of the 7th District of the State of New York, consisting of the counties of Steuben, Allegheny and Tiago. About the year 1828, General Cruger moved to Syracuse and 1833, after his marriage to Mrs. Shepherd, he moved to Wheeling, W. Va. Early in June, 1843, while attending a meeting of the Directors of the Wheeling Bank, he was stricken down with apoplexy, dying within a few moments after the attack.



SHEPHERD MANSION.

After the death of her second husband, Mrs. Cruger continued to live in the "Stone Mansion," managing her extensive plantation and large business interests. Many noted people made it a point to visit this wonderful old lady. Several persons have written accounts of her, each giving a different aspect. The following is by the great-grand-son of her sister-in-law, Sarah Shepherd, wife of Francis Duke, Major S. A. Duke, of Arkansas:—

"When I visited Mrs. Cruger at her home, six miles from Wheel-

ing in June, 1858, she told me she was then in her 92nd year. I found her reading the National Intelligencer without glasses and expressing wonder at it and suggesting that it was second sight, she told me it was not, that she had never worn glasses nor failed in any of her senses nor had she ever been a victim to the usual vicissitudes of women and could remember events as closely as when a lass. She was certainly a wonderful woman, and I should have spent six days with her instead of the six hours I did spend most pleasantly. At that time her estate was the most valuable property taxed to one person or firm in Ohio county, as she informed me. She related many reminiscences of the early settlement of Wheeling and its environs. She also sang a little song about Lord Dunmore, which was in vogue after his expedition. She also said that on his return march rumor outran Lord Dunmore and his forces so that everyone was on the *qui vive* to see a live Lord, especially the children, who were on the watch. But when the party arrived and she was told which was Lord Dunmore, she ran to the house as fast as she could and called to her mother, 'that Lord Dunmore was nothing but a man and not a very big one at that.' "

Among those who most frequently stopped to visit Mrs. Cruger was Senator Benton and his family. His daughter, Mrs. Fremont, has left a graphic description of her visits as a child and of her last visit in company with General Fremont. It was during the Civil War and a party of army officers accompanied General and Mrs. Fremont.

"Coming out of the high close hills on to the lawn belonging to "The Stone House," we saw a well-built house of dressed stone, very large and solid with the usual detached kitchen and long row of 'negro quarters.'

In a large library lined with books we found seated there, the old lady, who knew perfectly all about General and Mrs. Fremont, and understood why the party of armed soldiers rode down her glen. She talked wonderfully of the conditions that had caused the war and of its inevitable result.

She was carefully dressed in rich black satin, with a cap of beautiful old yellow lace, with big bows of orange and red ribbons on top and broad strings tied under her chin. The inevitable false dark hair was framed in with rich lace quillings.

Her age was told by the skin of face and hands, which were like crumpled parchment, but the lips were firm and the eyes deep set in wrinkled lids, were still dark and keen. She was then one hundred years old. She had in her hand a volume of "The Spectator," which she said was the kind of writing she liked. Her old books were the only kind she cared for. "But I know all that is going on. I take a New York daily and the Wheeling papers, and when I want other information I send for my lawyer."

We went up to see the ball-room, which was across the whole front of the house, with many windows and a handsome carved marble mantel at each end, and deep closets on both sides of these fire-places.

Like Queen Elizabeth, Mrs. Cruger would seem to have kept all her fine clothes. The whole walls were hung thick with dresses of silk and satin and velvet pelisses trimmed with fur; braided riding-habits; mantles of damasked black silks; band-boxes piled from floor to ceiling full of wonderful bonnets, some of tremendous size, fine large leg-horn straw, costing from fifty to one hundred dollars; also veils that would reach to the knee of fine old English lace; gold and silver muslin; and fine embroidered cashmere turbans, a perfect museum of fashion from 1800 to 1840. There were treasures of good lace in shawls and veils of old English Honiton, large capes of fine French needle-work, yards of Mechlin, a shawl and flounces of Spanish lace. Much of these treasures we were told were carried off to the negro quarters. Mrs. Cruger was a remarkable woman in intellect, but with not much heart."

Many years ago, a short time before the death of Mrs. Cruger, Mrs. Rebecca Harding Davis wrote a magazine article that included a description of Mrs. Cruger.

"I accidentally met again a curious old character, who was widely known, whom if fate had but placed her in the compressed centre of a court instead of in the inconsequent hurly-burly of a republic, would have made for herself a great place in history.

Old Mrs. Cruger could give the history of every inch of ground from Blennerhasset Island up to Fort DuQuesne. There was no better authority for the old legends of that time. She was a cousin of McCulloch, who made the famous leap. She was also in the Fort when Molly Scott went for the shot and brought it in, in her

apron. A small withered old woman seated bolt upright in her chair, her fingers loaded with rings of great value, a great turnip-shaped gold watch was fastened by massive chains.

Her white hair was drawn back on a thick puff under a cap of lace and fastened by a diamond pin. Mrs. Cruger led her visitors into the dining-room, where a magnificent sideboard filled up one end of the room and was ladened with massive silver. Mrs. Davis found Mrs. Cruger a curious study for the dilettanti in anomalies in human nature, as well as one of the most noteworthy women of her time.

She had the keen insight, the delicate instinct, dainty in expression, of manner and speech of a woman of the world, for many croweded, watchful, eventful years. From the time of her first marriage she spent her winters in Washington at first as a beauty and *bel esprit*, then as an object of interest from her eccentricities her cool skill, keen interest and long familiarity with the private political life of the capital. Her manner had the quaint archness, overlying intense pride of an old French Marquise.

In conversation she poured out an inexhaustible store of anecdote gathered during a long life that covered a broad field and one of glaring contrasts not an Indian War back to the Colonial era with which she was not familiar. She remembered the first Declaration of Independence. She had known many men and sat on the side of the court-room devoted to Burr's adherents during his trial at Richmond, a young and brilliant beauty, while her husband faced her on the other side.

She talked of Benton, Clay and Webster, then political leaders, as "these young men promising but crude, crude."

One of these men said of her: "I never passed her mansion without stopping to pay my respects to her. She had a powerful intellect in her younger days. Many of our caucuses were held in her drawing-rooms. She could keep a secret better than most men, but her love of sarcasm and intrigue kept her from being very effective." Even in her most brilliant days she was accused of being selfish and even miserly.

Colonel Shepherd left her all his estate and a life interest in the estate he inherited from his father, but even after her marriage to General Cruger she held on to every dollar of the Shepherd estate.

She was fond of boasting that her first husband, Colonel Shepherd, had ducal blood in his veins.

She was a lonely, eccentric old lady. Her eccentricity had been fostered by the hardships and the solitude of pioneer life. One of her morbid fancies was to intensify her love of solitude by banishing every living being from her house at night, the slaves to the negro quarters.

Once when her physician remonstrated with her for not allowing her maid to remain in her room at night, she haughtily said: "Of what should I be afraid? Of death? I do not expect him these twenty years." She was then ninety.

Mrs. Cruger was one of the last of the slave owners. As a slave-owner she was a model. The fifteen or more slaves she owned at the time President Lincoln liberated them, were deeply attached to her and lived easy and comfortable lives.

She had not sold a slave for many years, but frequently bought them. She was often heard to remark that she had seen the rise and fall of the slave system in this country and she herself was probably the only slave holder who stood by and saw the liberation of her slaves without regret.

The year before Mrs. Cruger died, the writer went with her father, Dr. McIntire, to visit Mrs. Cruger. She was then very feeble, but her mind was clear and she retained a great interest in the affairs of the world. The Civil War was just recently ended and its effects deeply interested her.

It was a great treat and event to a young girl to be permitted to roam over the old mansion and rummage in the chests and drawers to see the wonderful assortment of garments of by-gone fashions of which she said:

"Every year I put away two dresses made in the current mode. I like to turn them over as you do pictures perhaps."

The unique old lady with so much vivacity was so deeply attached to this world and its many widely extended interests, it seemed as if she could not leave it, could not die. The end was slow in coming, September 26, 1867. This visit made an ineffaceable impression upon the writer, who little dreamed she might one day recall these memories as a tribute to the memory of one who was a Colonial Dame, a real Daughter of the American Revolution, and a modern woman of the world.

Indianapolis, Indiana. HARRIET McI. FOSTER.

CAPTURE OF GENERALS CROOK AND KELLY.

BY W. S. LAIDLEY.

We listened with interest to one of the parties engaged in this incident of the Civil War, and on account of the acquaintance of those mentioned, and of the daring of the raid ,we record the same.

In February, 1865, there were at Cumberland, Maryland, Generals Crook, Kelly, Hays, Lightburn and Duval.

The town had a population of about four thousand, and there were as many United States soldiers encamped there also. This place had been made a Military Post, held it as a base of supplies, for hospitals and general winter quarters.

There were also soldiers at Winchester, Virginia, and at New Creek, and Cumberland appeared to be guarded by these two outposts and there was felt to be perfectly secure from any enemy, and the officers were rather indifferent as to rebels, supposing they were too far away and the weather too severe for any interference. For the enemy to make a raid upon Cumberland they would meet with a good force there under General Kelly, who was there in command, but they would most likely to meet with the troops from Winchester and New Creek before they could get away.

It was only from Moorefield, in Hardy county, Virginia, that the rebels could come, and this point was nearer by twenty miles to the other points mentioned than to Cumberland.

In order to make a successful attempt on Cumberland, if there were no other obstacles, they would have to execute the feat of the Kanawha pilot, when he made a dangerous landing with his steamboat, who said: "He would have to run in like the devil and back out equally as quick."

There were Confederate Rangers at or near Moorefield. Lieutenant McNeil was the officer in command; the weather was cold, the ground frozen and covered with snow. He made a selection of about twenty-five men that were acquainted in the town of Cumberland, who knew the streets and hotels, and he started to see this place.

Jacob Gassman was one of these men; he had lived in the town of Cumberland and had been a clerk at the hotel there. He said that they captured the first outpost and secured the counter sign, taking the guards with them.

The next pickets they found were the of the First West Virginia Infantry and they had a good fire and were playing poker, when they also were taken charge of.

McNeil and his men rode into town as if they belonged there as of right, and no one questioned them as to their business.

It was not known that the town had so many Generals in it, and only Generals Crook and Kelly were known to be there.

JACOB GASSMAN.

Sargeant Kuykendall and a squad were detailed to go and secure General Kelly. This Sargeant had had some acquaintance with General Kelly, having been a prisoner in the General's hands and it was a pleasure for the Sargeant to be able to return the compliment to the General, which was done in a few words and in a short time. While engaged in this work, they also found Adjutant General Melvin, and they concluded to bring him along for company for the General in command.

Sargeant Vandiver was sent with a few men to another hotel, where they found General Crook. Mr. Gassman was well acquainted here and he secured a black boy, who was left to watch the fires and lights, to show him to the bed-room of General Crook, which was No. 46. Gassman said he knocked at the door and when asked

who it was, replied that it was a friend, when he was invited to come in, and at this time Vandiver and the others came up and they all went in. Of course, the General desired information, when he was invited to get up and take a ride. He was told that General Rosser had the town and all that therein was.

There was no time to tell long stories or to listen to them either. The Generals were placed on horseback, with a soldier behind him on the same horse; this however only lasted for a while. While all this was being done, others had cut the wires and destroyed the telegraphic communication.

It is said the sentries supposed that the men were scouts coming in to make reports and paid no attention to them, and it was late at night and but few on the streets.

Mr. Gassman said they had not gone more than four or five miles when they heard the canon, announcing the alarm. They rode along as rapidly as they could well manage to go, for they all knew that the danger was not over; that they would be followed and that a scout from New Creek and probably from Winchester would probably be met with before they were through with the enterprise on hand. When near Moorefield a Federal scout was seen, but no attack was made, and before reaching Moorefield the Confederates left the road and took to the hills, and no further trouble was had. After going for a long distance, being worn out, they went into camp for rest and rations.

Mr. Gassman said that General Crook took his capture in good part, and expressed his gratification when he found that General Rosser did not have the entire town; that he was talkative, in good spirits and laughed and talked and made the best of it. And that they did all to make the prisoners comfortable that was possible under the circumstances. It seems that Mr. Gassman became quite attached to General Crook and furnished him with cigars, and whatever else was possible to get for his comfort.

After the war was over, Mr. Gassman wanted some assistance or recommendation, and he did not hesitate to ask the same from General Crook, and received all he asked most cheerfully.

They were taken to Harrisonburg, then to Staunton, and from thence sent on to Richmond.

There was with Mr. Gassman, a Mr. Dailey, who was the son of

the landlord who kept the hotel at which General Crook was staying when captured. And furthermore, there was a Miss Dailey there also, to whom General Crook was married after the war—captured again.

The raid was a bold and dangerous one, and with forty other trials, it probably would have failed each time.

Adjutant Melvin afterwards became Judge Melvin, of Wheeling.

Most all of the Confederates engaged, lived in Hardy or adjoining counties.

Mr. Gassman resides in Berkeley county, West Virginia.

THE VAN BIBBER FAMILY.

BY MRS. M. W. DONNALLY.

The Van Bebbers were natives of Holland originally. In 1685 Henrick Van Bebber, whose wife was Catharine Bougard was the wealthiest and foremost coffee merchant of Amsterdam, when that article was first introduced into Europe. Java was ceded to Holland about the middle of that century. The Dutch were then the leading traders, as well as the greatest maritime people of Europe, and held jealously to the supreme control of the East Indian trade. From tradition as well as family histories we know the Van Bebbers were people of excellent standing in the Mother Country. The name "Bebber" is derived from a village of that name in the Dutchy of Cleves, or the village takes its name from the family. The prefix of "Van" also indicates high respectability.

The Beehive and golden coffee bag were placed on the family escutcheon, and the motto "By industry we thrive," was placed beneath the shield.

It is said that one of the sons of this family displeased his father by a mesalliance, which he would not forgive. The offending one came with his family to this Country, living first near Philadelphia, then in Maryland, and some years before the Revolution, found a home in Bottetourt Co., Va. Through the various changes of home and fortune there existed among the people two important facts that stamped all of that name as the same family. One was the preservation of identical family names, and the other the coat of arms.

From an early history we hear of the family espousing the cause of the Reformation according to the Doctrine of Simon Menno, a reformed priest of Friesland, whose simple faith and earnest piety gained him many followers. The Van Bebbers with others of this faith were objects of violent persecution and were forced from Holland to villages outside on the Rhine. Crefield was one where many of these people settled. Should we wonder that they lent a listening ear to the preaching to Wm. Penn, Ames, Stubbs, and Caton, when they visited these refugees in 1683, offering an asylum beyond the seas where they might worship God according to their own beliefs.

For a century and a half they had been driven unresistently up and down the Rhine, suffering untold sorrows. Their religious views forced them to nonresistence. They took not the sword, and swore not at all, believed in repentance at Baptism. Their habits were so frugal and industrious that wherever they settled, the arts and crafts so rapidly developed, they soon became a power. Crefield, the present manufacturing centre of silks and woolens, gained its reputation and start from these Mennonites. It is said that Wm. of Orange borrowed money from them to carry on his wars against France and Spain. "They would do nothing but work and pray," says an old writer, and it was with difficulty their offices were filled, and their laws enforced against evil doers, so utterly opposed were they to all worldly pursuits and political offices.

One of their preachers, Ylles Kassel, writes in 1665 of the unhappy condition of their people. "Well it is known what misery, suffering, and danger are about in this land, with robbing, plundering, and burning, murdering. Many a man is brought into pain and need and abused even unto death. Many a beautiful home is destroyed. Clothes are torn from the backs of many people. Cattle and herds are taken away. Much sorrow and complaint have been heard. The bechives are broken down, and the wine is spilled." In the persecution of these religious people the men were burned and the women drowned. They were sometimes buried alive also to extort confessions and gain information concerning their own sects.

Loher in his "History of the Dutch in America," says, "As true pilgrims upon earth, going from place to place in the hope that they

would find quiet and rest, appear the Mennonites. They were the most important among the pioneers in North America."

They have been abused by their enemies as being an outgrowth of the Anabaptists of Germany and the Netherlands. This however is a grave slander, as they avoided politics, worldly avocations, and despised the wild excesses of the iconoclasts ,and also the impudent and outrageous usurpation of John of Leyden his followers, in their wantonness had destroyed the magnificent works of art in the beautiful Cathedrals of Antwerp, Tournay, and Mechlin. Their destruction was complete and simply carried on for the love of it, for they left paintings, statuary, and reliquaries lying in heaps, having no appreciation of their priceless value, and besides no care for the results.

From the Mennonites sprang the Quakers of England. George Fox, the founder of the Quakers, imbibed his views from these people. So we see how there was a similarity of taste, belief, and occupation, now the common bond of persecution bound them more closely, and in coming to this Country, their assimilation was complete.

The most reliable authority for the history of the Van Bebbers after coming to this country is to be had from an article published in the Pennsylvania Historical Magazine of January, 1880, entitled, "The Settlement of Germantown," by Judge Samuel Pennypacker, of Pennsylvania, now the Governor of that Commonwealth. As the facts are historical, and beyond doubt obtained from reliable sources, I have taken the liberty of quoting from his article.

"An old historian says upon invitation of Wm. Penn to our distressed forefathers of the faith it is said a number of them emigrated from Holland and the Palatinate and settled in Germantown in 1683, and there established the first Church in America. Wm. Penn had conveyed on the 11th of January, 1683, to Covert Remke, Lenarts Arets, Jacobs Isaac Van Bebber each 1,000 acres of land. They with three others constituted the original purchasers of land in Germantown. Jacobs Isaac Van Bebber came in 1684. His father Isaac Jacobs and his brother Mathias followed in 1687. Many others joined them by this time. The colony was headed by the celebrated Daniel Pastorious, a very learned man, who at the age of twenty-two disputed law and philosophy in seven different languages at the great Courts and Universities of Germany. He says,

"I had heard of the contemplated trip of the Pietests to Pennsylvania, and a strong desire came upon me to cross the seas with them, and after having seen so much of European idleness, to lead them to a quiet and Christian life." These good people had the usual vicissitudes of first settlers in a new and untried country. Pastorious says "It could not be described, nor could it be believed by coming generations in what need and want and with what Christian contentment and persistent industry this Germantown ship started." These people brought means to purchase large bodies of land, but they landed in the autumn and were too late to build houses or raise crops.

In another year one of them writes cheerfully, "I have been busy and made a brave dwelling and under it a cellar fit to live in, and have so much grain, such as Indian corn and buckwheat, that I shall be better off than I was last year."

The village of Germantown now had become so populous that a charter was desired. On May 31, 1691, a charter of incorpation was issued. Frances Daniel Pastorious was Bailiff. Jacob Isaacs Van Bebber was one of six committeemen with the power to hold Court, and a market, impose fines, and to make ordinances. It was therefore ordered that "On the 19th of one month in each year the people shall be called together and the laws and ordinances read aloud to them."

The industries of this place increased at a rapid rate. "They made such fine linen as no person of quality need be ashamed to wear. It was not alone that the humbler industries throve, but printing and publishing were followed. Willem Rittenhuysen in 1690 built the first paper mill of the colonies. The Bible was printed here in German thirty-nine years before it appeared in English. Pastorious as a writer attained to a higher degree of literary attainments than any man of this colony. No names in the new world are more conspicuous than those of that colony—Mullenburg, Pennypacker, Rittenhuysen, Wister, Cassel, Seidenstriker, Levering, Keppell, and others of equal interest and prominence.

In 1702 began a settlement on the Skipeck. Further up the Schuykill, Mathias Van Bebber, son of Jacobs Isaac, located by patent, February 22, 1702, 6,168 acres on the Skipeck. For the next half century it was known as Bebber's township or Bebber's town.

He immediately set about to colonize it. Most of the settlers were Mennonites. Van Bebber gave 100 acres for a church which was built in 1725.

In 1714 he purchased from Ephriam Augustus Herman the large estates known as Bohemia Manor in Cecil Co., Md., where the family continually resided many years. Governor Pennypacker winds up his article with the following comment: "The Van Bebbers were undoubtedly men of standing, ability, enterprise, and means. The father, Jacob Isaacs, moved into Philadelphia before 1698, being described as a merchant on High Street, and died there in 1711. Mathias, who is frequently mentioned by James Logan, made a trip to Holland in 1701 on business, returning to Philadelphia before April, 1702. He remained in the city until 1704, when he and his elder brother, Isaac Jacobs Van Bebber, Regner Hermans Van Bucklow, and perhaps others, removed to Bohemia Manor, Cecil Co., Maryland. There he was Justice of the Peace, and is described in the deeds as a merchant and a gentleman. Their descendants like many others soon fell away from the simple habit and strict creed of their forefathers. The Van Bebbers of Maryland have been distinguished in all the wars, and at the bar. At the Falls of the Kanawha, Van Bebber's rock, a crag jutting out at a great height over the river, still preserves the memory and recalls the exploits of one of the most daring Indian fighters of Western Virginia. Jacob Isaac had three grandsons named Jacob, one of whom was doubtless Jacob Van Bebber who became Judge of the Supreme Court of Delaware, November 27, 1764."

The daring Indian fighter referred to was Capt. John Van Bibber who removed to the Kanawha Valley in 1781, where he lived until his death in 1821. He was indeed a picturesque character at that opening period of the history of this western country.

The Van Bibbers who came down to Virginia through the Shenandoah Valley, at the period of the German settlement of that region, were Isaac, Peter, John, and Brigetta. Isaac was a Baptist preacher and went to North Carolina, married Miss Davies, the daughter of a wealhy planter. Peter came as far west as Greenbrier Co., built a fortified house on Wolf Creek. There he resided with his family until the war of the Revolution. John Van Bibber was a surveyor and seemed to have followed his profession by indis-

criminate wanderings through the Valley, and went as far as the Ohio. In 1766 we find he patented 271 acres in Hampshire Co., and 345 acres on the Greenbrier River. About 1760 he married in Baltimore, Chloe Standiford, a bride tall and fair to look upon. He came with her to Bottetourt Co., Va. He had lived there but a few years when a desire seized him to explore the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers. This trip must have been made in 1769 or '70. This western country was awakening the widespread interest of the people west of the seaboard. The magnificent stretch of prairie and forest; the vast herds of deer and buffalo and more ferocious beasts, still roaming at will through this undiscovered country, held out most enticing charms to the adventurous. This journey at the time was considered hazardous in the extreme, and but few had undertaken it. Richard and Hancock Taylor made this journey in '69. The banks of the Ohio were jealously guarded by the Indians and many lives were lost in the attempt to go down these rivers by boat. He, however, went up to Fort Pitt with six men, built their boats, and loaded them with articles of trade for the Indians and Spaniards. The latter as jealously guarded and claimed both banks of the Mississippi as the Indians did the Ohio, but fortunately for the explorers, the Spanish could be bought. They made this perilous journey of nearly two thousand miles without loss of life. After reaching Natchez, disposing of their boats and goods, they set across the country for their homes in Bottetourt Co., Va. If the journey down these streams was perilous it was nothing compared to this overland journey, crossing streams and morasses, through impenetrable wildernesses of the dark gloom of semi-tropical forests, overhung in many places with shrouding mosses, filled with wild beasts, reptiles, and worse than all the implacable Indian who was now aroused to dire vengeance by the encroachments of the white men on the waters of Watauga, Clinch, and Holstein. Shelby, Robinson, and Servier had been more than a match for the Indians and had aroused them to the highest pitch. The party of six traveled on in comparative comfort. They were hardy and vigorous in mind and body, and paid little heed to the creature discomforts of the journey. One hapless day they fell into an ambuscade of Cherokees, who, after killing some of them, scattered the rest so thoroughly, they never came together. John Van Bibber was deprived of everything excepting a few articles of clothing, without guide, compass or gun,

he wandered hopelessly in the dense wilds of the forests of Mississippi and Tennessee for months, amid hope and despair. Who can imagine a human more desolate, in this terrible gloom, each day passed as he helplessly groped his way. His mind and heart grew faint as he thought of the young wife and children in the home by the upper waters of the James. At last one day after giving up all hope, he espied a smoke curling beyond the forest in the distance. With a glad heart he made his way to it. Coming nearer he saw a cabin nestling in a hollow in the woods, and when he came to it found a hearty welcome from a kind, gentle man and his beautiful wife, who were none other than Daniel and Rebecca Boone in their cabin on the Holstein.

He could never forget the welcome and good cheer of that occasion. He staid long enough to rest and recruit. And how delightful must have been the recounting of the hairbreadth escapes, struggles, and the forecastings for the future of this glorious new country. This was the beginning of a friendship of these men that lasted for fifty years, and was cemented by a marriage of their children and other members of their families. Daniel Boone gave John Van Bibber clothing and a gun, and no doubt a hearty Godspeed and unbounded sympathy in their common experiences. The remainder of the journey was passed in ease and comfort.

None can ever tell of the joy that met his home coming. He had long been given up for dead, as nine long months had passed without a word of tidings. One of his party came in a year after, the rest were never heard of. This journey evidently undertaken for profit, ended with memories only of thrilling experiences and financial failure. This trip gave him great notoriety, as I have several letters referring to it. One especially from the indefatigable historian, Lyman C. Draper, who wrote begging my mother for particulars of her grand-father Van Bibber's famous Natchez trip.

The Indians at this period were thoroughly aroused, as the whites along the whole border of the Ohio were encroaching upon their territory. The wily creatures were lurking behind every tree, like wild beasts, waiting for their victims, with the gun and the scalping knife. The Mingoes and Shawnees had their runners going to and fro everywhere spurring their braves on to vengeance, and were gathering their forces to meet the white man in one great struggle.

Such was the condition of affairs when John Van Bibber reached the settlement. Rumors of trouble with the Mother Country were rife and there was general disquiet everywhere in the land. Just at this period, in 1773, John Van Bibber with his brother Peter and a Baptist preacher named Alderson, came as a surveying party down this Valley. The paper I have says, "Lord Dunmore appointed him for this duty," but as it is not an official document, I give the statement for what it is worth.

He started from his brother's fort on Wolf Creek, crossed the mountains to the Gauley River, and down that stream to the junction with the New River. As there were evidences of Indians on this side they crossed over the Kanawha two miles below, camping under the historic cliff, known after this event as "Van Bibber's Rock."

There they remained several days to avoid the Indians. While there Van Bibber cut his name high upon this precipice. This act seemed sufficient to warrant the most fabulous and foolish stories that any self-respecting man would scout. He was a gentleman, fearless, intelligent and unobtrusive. His very nature and training avoided display in private as well as public affairs. The ridiculous story of his wife and child with a pet bear in a canoe coming to his rescue, is too foolish for words. He was off in the wilds on official duty, with his wife and baby safely living in their home in Bottetourt.

The surveyors crossed the Kanawha 28 miles below. One of the party searching for water with a lighted torch was filled with surprise and alarm on finding the water covered with flames. Their feelings may be imagined on discovering this unusual phenomenon.

There was no one from whom to gain information as not a human being dwelt in the length and breadth of the Valley at that day, except Walter Kelly, who that same year settled on the Creek that bears his name. He was murdered, however, the next year by the Indians. No doubt John Van Bibber who closely studied nature and her works was convinced that this was only a display of one of the hidden forces of her inexhaustible supply. It is known to be the first discovery of natural gas in this valley, which has since become a great factor in the development of this country.

This party passed on down to the mouth of the Kanawha, return-

ing to the Greenbrier by nearly the same route. The next year, it is said, the army of Gen. Lewis passed over this path, guided by Capt. Arbuckle. One statement of our family history says, "Capt. Arbuckle came over with the Van Bibbers the year before" when they made this survey.

The battle of Point Pleasant was fought October 10, 1774, Gen. Andrew Lewis commanding. John Van Bibber, his brothers Isaac and Peter and the latter's son, Jesse, fought on this memorable occasion. Isaac had come from the Carolinas on a visit to his brother in Bottetourt Co. when the call to arms resounded through the land. Although a Baptist minister he could and would not resist, as hearts on that day were attuned to martial music and responded to its call. He fell mortally wounded, beside his Colonel, Charles Lewis. Peter fought with such bravery that he was promoted and complimented on the battle field. After that battle John Van Bibber was written of by all historians as "Captain," and family notes say he was made Captain after the battle of Point Pleasant, and Commissary of Fort Randolph.

The causes and results of that battle have been so fully and ably written that I shall pass them by. The late Dr. Hale and Mr. Virgil Lewis have given us histories of that time. Mr. Randall, of the Ohio Historical Society, has lately written a searching and splendid pamphlet on the Dunmore War. These late writers adding their knowledge and research to that of the older historians, have thoroughly laid this battle before the public.

We venture to say that the personnel of this army was composed of the best and most active brawn and brain of the countries from which they come. They had all suffered for conscience's sake, and had sacrificed the comforts of homes beyond the seas for religious and political freedom, and now they, or their sons, were in the fray once more, for the protection of their firesides. These were strenuous times. Men had to choose the service of the Continental Army or the more arduous duty of the border. The Van Bibbers remained on the border. Their sons and nephews, Isaac, the son of Isaac who fell in the battle, with Jacob and Mathias were with Gen. Anthony Wayne just twenty years later in the last great battle of the Revolution, the memorable battle of the Maumee, Fallen Timbers, that decided the fate of the Indians east of the Mississippi and closed the struggle with England for possession of the forts on the lakes.

In 1774 several families attempted the settlement of this valley. None could remain in safety. We find in 1781 a petition to Gov. Randolph begging most respectfully and earnestly for protection. These petitioners say they all had made three attempts to remain on their lands and plantations on the Great Kanawha, but could not on account of the horrible depredations of the Indians. The petitioners assert that they will secure the pay of a Lieutenant and thirty men by the corn tax levy. The money of that period was not worth a "Continental." Corn was the medium of exchange.

That same year, 1781, the Van Bibbers came out to stay. John's home was on the south side of the Kanawha. Peter's was near by, and his Sister Brigetta who had married a Mr. Robinson, of Botetourt Co. lived on the opposite side on Crooked Creek. They, at times of peace, lived a happy free life on the border, though cut off from the luxuries of living, they were self supporting. The town supplied them with excellent woolen and linen clothes. The women made exquisite laces and fine embroideries. The whir and buzz of the spinning wheel was heard from morn till eve. A family of faithful colored women did the hard work of the family. The colored men were in service of the field with gun in hand beside the master to do his bidding, and faithfully they discharged their duties. Flat boats were seen plying between Pittsburg and New Orleans, though very rare. They came often enough to give my ladies an occasional piece of finery. I have heard my grandmother speak especially of two fine Panama hats that had cost fifty dollars each. These did service for the four, Chloe, Miriam, Hannah and Marjorie, by cutting them in two. Each was trimmed with two and a half yards of ribbon at ten dollars a yard. There was an occasional dance at the garrison. The real side of this life, however, was a bitter struggle. The men worked with rifles strung to their backs. The women stood guard and molded bullets, blanched with fear, for the intrepid men as they stooped at the loop holes or met the enemies in the open. In 1787 and '88 the Indians grew more violent. The treaty after the battle of Point Pleasant was now disregarded. The details of murdering and burnings on the border are horrible to relate. It is estimated at this time fifteen hundred Kentuckians lost their lives and fully as many on the Virginia settlement on the Ohio, Kanawha, and Greenbrier.

In the early spring of '87 John Van Bibber went to the opposite

shore of the Ohio with his colored man Davy to make the year's supply of sugar for family use. His daughter Rhoda and son Joseph came over in a canoe to visit him. As they drew near the shore, the yell of savages and the firing of guns were heard. Rhoda was killed, her brother taken prisoner. The outraged father thought of vengeance alone. With Davy's help they killed four Indians, wounded the fifth, who was found dead a few days after. Rhoda was a beautiful young woman of nineteen with an abundant suit of auburn hair. She was the eldest of five daughters and two sons. Her cruel death was a crushing blow to the happy family.

Her scalp was divided and taken to Detroit by the Indians, who received from the British Commander of the Fort 60 dollars for this trophy. Joseph, the young prisoner, said he saw barrels of these scalps of women and children lying festering in this horrible place. The Indians were roundly rewarded for every scalp brought in. This was our Mother Country's method of discouraging settlements, to murder all the whites, to enable them to hold on to the country west of the Ohio, that her trade might be prospered and maintained at the Great Lakes. Their day of reckoning was at hand. Already their hair buying General Hamilton had been captured at Vincennes by Clark and sent to Virginia as prisoner of war.

Joseph was a boy of twelve years. He adapted himself to his surroundings, having acquired the rudiments of an education at home he soon made himself master of the Indian and French languages and was made interpreter. One of my letters says that he escaped in two years from the Indians and remained with a French trader near Detroit, coming home after Wayne's treaty. The grandson of Mathias Van Bibber writes that Mathias made the perilous trip among the Indians and rescued Joseph, brought him home to his mourning mother after an absence of seven years. He died the following year. His death no doubt resulting from neglect and exposure in the severe climate of the lakes. I must not neglect to mention Uncle Davy, the negro, who in his valient onslaught on the Indians, received a scalp wound, leaving a white mark through his crisp kinky hair to his dying day. My mother as a child, said as she ran her fingers over the dried and blanched place on this very old man, he would tell over and over the stories of that and many other days. Davy, Plim, Phyllis and Coly and old Granny Maria

are the only names I can now recall, of the Van Bibbers colored family. They all likewise carried the name of Van Bibber.

John Van Bibber had just before this the sorrow of having his only Sister Brigetta taken prisoner by the Shawnees. It was a little later in the spring, when all nature was gladdened by its coming. The little home on Crooked Creek was broken up by the Indians. The house was nestled in the amphitheatre of surrounding hills, with the clear waters of the Kanawha gleaming and glistening below. This gentle woman with her husband Isaac Robinson, three children and one man servant was happy indeed in her humble home. Late one afternoon they were surprised by the Indians who, creeping on them, instantly killed her husband and his companion who were at work near by. Her son, Isaac, a boy of eight years was fishing at the river. On hearing the commotion he ran to his mother's aid, just in time to see them slay his baby brother of two years. The house was rifled and burned, he, his mother and brother John, four years of age, were taken prisoners. They were forced rapidly across the Ohio with no rest that night. The Van Bibbers lived across the river, so it was several hours before they knew of the terrible disaster. Capt. John and others went in pursuit, but the wily savages were some hours ahead and it was impossible to overtake them. He came across the dead body of little John who, unable to keep pace with the other captors, had been killed. His little body was tenderly cared for by the pursuers. They then turned mournfully home.

After two days and nights rapid marching, the prisoners were allowed to rest. This sorrowing woman worn out in body, her soul crying out in anguish, lay on the bare earth with only a few green boughs for a bed, and the vaulted sky above her the only covering. We, of course, can never define her feelings. Her husband, two children and home all gone. Away from kindred and friends, among vengeful, wicked savages, with most likely a horrible death awaiting her and her son. She would have courted death rather than life for herself and Isaac with these degraded people.

She braced herself for the coming struggle. Brigetta was of that superb type that quailed not before trials. The blood of martyrs ran through her veins. The suffering for conscience' sake of her people was reflected in her and gave her strength and courage.

After a long weary march one evening towards the end of their journey, as she gladly laid down her suffering body on the kindly, cool ground, she could not sleep. The gentle stars looked down in tender compassion on her woes of mind and anguish of body. She tossed to and fro in pain and sorrow and a gentle hope came to her with a sweet solace of mind as she looked for a reward for all this sorrow. When the morning light streamed fully through the tender green of the tree tops, it revealed a little child that had come to her. Oh, the joy of deliverance! What peace and happiness came to the mother heart as she pressed the little one to her. What fears and hopes were hers!

She was forced to go on with the party without respite. After a while when the babe became a burden, it was taken from her and ruthlessly murdered, and the lifeless body thrown at her feet and left to be a prey for the wild beasts. When they reached the lakes she was assigned her duties as cook and seamstress, etc. Isaac was adopted by a brave and carried away. Brigetta made herself useful, and lived thus five years when she was bought by a French trader and released. She went direct to Bottetourt Co. After three years waiting without any tidings of her son, she heard of Wayne's treaty in 1795. Again she started on this trying journey. While in Northern Ohio, in one of the Indian villages, she was seized with the smallpox which was then raging among the Indians, carrying off its thousands. It was then months before she could go on.

When at last she reached the Fort and found her boy with his tribe he utterly refused to come with her. He had been one of them for eight years just at the formative period of his life. The wild, unrestrained life appealed to his very soul. The savages had been kind to him in their rude way. He could hunt, fish, and go to war as he willed. He therefore quailed before the restrictions of civilized life. However, after weeks of entreaty, he came home with his mother. They returned to Point Pleasant, where they lived with his uncle for four years. The young fellow's constitution yielded to the restrain of civilization and he died at the close of the century. Brigetta, his mother, with her wonderful constitution, survived many years. My mother remembers her at the age of ninety-five, as she recounted to her the stories of her wonderful life.

Isaac Robinson's grave is to be found on the banks of the Ohio in Mason County, West Virginia.

THE CHANGE OF CALENDARS.

A Calendar or Almanac is a list or table of days and months throughout the year to denote the division of time. Time is defined to be a part of duration or existence, and Calendars are used to keep account of this period of existence. Calendars have been used in some form by all people—they have existed in the form of notch-sticks and now are made into good sized books, full of all kinds of information.

A year is the time that it requires the Earth to make a revolution around the Sun, and there is more than one way to measure this time, and the different ways do not all give the same result, but the solar year has been determined as the year and it is pronounced to be three hundred and sixty-five days, five hours, forty-eight minutes and forty-eight seconds.

A day, is the time in which the Earth makes one revolution on its axis—the time from sun up until sun up.

A month was formerly considered the time between new moons, which is about twenty-nine days and one-half day. This is called the lunar month.

The time keepers and Calendar makers tried to make all these divisions arranged together—the year, the month and the day multiples of each other, but twelve lunar months would not make a full year, and thirteen months made more than a year, and some of them placed a short month in the year, every few years, to keep the months and the seasons in place.

So it was a difficult matter to establish dates, in a manner that it could be told when an incident transpired, whereby such date could be recorded. Different nations adopted different times to begin to count from, and they also had a different way in counting, and it was a slow process in establishing a method by which the certainty of dates could be ascertained, if it has yet been done satisfactorily in reference to ancient incidents and transactions.

The Jews reckon from the beginning of Creation, but we know not when they first began to use said date or formed their first calendar.

They evidently suppose that they know it accurately as they give the time of the birth of Christ from creation as 3,760 years and three months.

They had their year divided into twelve months and occasionally placed in an extra month.

The Roman Calendar formerly had the year divided into ten months, and they were as follows: The first was called *Martius,* our March. The Second *Aprilis,* April. The third *Maius,* May, and the fourth *Junius,* June. The other following months were named for the numbers of the month, thus for the fifth, *Quintilis;* the sixth, *Sextilis;* the seventh, September; the eighth, October; the ninth, November and the tenth, December.

Subsequently there were added two others, February and January, but in 452 B. C. this order was changed and January was placed before February, and then February was the last month.

In 46 B. C. Julius Cæsar reformed the Calendar somewhat and he made *Quintilis* into July and *Sextilis,* into August, and made other changes. His Calendar has since been known as the Julian Calendar, and now called the Old Style to distinguish it from others. This continued in use until the year 1582 when Pope Gregory XIII, promulgated a new calendar, for the use of the Church, which was known as the Gregorian Calendar or new style. This new style was adopted generally by the Roman Catholic countries, but the Protestant countries refused to accept it at first because it came from the Pope. Scotland, however, adopted it in 1600, and the German Protestant States, Denmark and Sweden about 1700. Religious prejudice gave way to convenience and benefits.

England being engaged in commerce with all the countries of the world, made use of the old style and the new, until 1751, when Lord Chesterfield, aided by several scientific gentlemen, secured an Act of Parliament making the change. This Act provided that the first day of January, following December 31, 1751, should be the first day of the year—before that time the year began with the 25th day of March. It also provided that the natural day next immediately following the 2nd day of September should be called the 14th day of September, omitting for that time only the eleven days intermediate nominal days of the common calendar.

This act was published in 24 Geo. 11 Ch. 23, and is also found in Hennings Statutes of Virginia, Vol. 1, page 393-4. It is said to have produced great excitement and objection in England and the members were threatened by a mob, as they claimed they had been

robbed of eleven good days, etc. It was customary to refer to the dates of year between January and March thus, 1637-8; 1742-3; and sometimes thus 174 2-3. After the change was made, when former dates were referred to, the same was followed by O. S., to denote that the reference was by the Old Style.

Washington was born February 11, 1832 O. S., but this has been dropped and now it is called February 22, 1732.

Russia is the only Country that now uses the Julian Calendar.

France, in her days of Revolution, adopted an entirely new calendar, but after the storm had passed, Napoleon, in 1806, restored the Gregorian Calendar.

W. S. LAIDLEY.

JUDGE LEWIS SUMMERS.

The Summers family is of Flemish origin and was first known in England at the time of the reformation. Then, property was granted them on the site of a vacated nunnery called "White Ladies" a short distance from the city of Worcester. This became the family seat and here they received and entertained Queen Elizabeth in her progress through Worcestershire in 1585. The bed in which she slept and the cup from which she drank were preserved by them as precious relics for many generations. Among its members were many men of distinction and renown. Sir George Summers, Lord High Admiral, Lord John Summers, Lord High Chancellor of England and Keeper of the Privy seal to William the III, being of the number. The branch to which the former belonged removed into Dorsetshire and from it descended the family of which we are writing. Sir George Summers commanded the "Sea Venture," one of the vessels which brought in the Jamestown Colony in 1607, and Col Louis Summers commanded the first, so-called, regiment of English soldiers sent over for the protection of the little body of settlers. The name is found in English history spelled Somers, Sommers, Sumers and Summers, but Sir George must have used the latter spelling as in "Neil's Virginia Company of London" it is so given. The American branch is also divided on this question, and in the early records of the different counties of Virginia

and Maryland the name of the same individual is frequently found with differing orthography. The Virginia family, however, adopted *Summers* as the one of ancient usage.

While not ignoring his English ancestry, Judge Summers was born too near to the stormy scenes of the revolution, and was at heart too sincerely an American patriot to value it very highly, and the ancestor he most loved and revered, and of whom he oftenest spoke, was his own great-grandfather, John Summers of Fairfax County, Virginia, and so highly did he honor his memory that he left on record many items pertaining to his history. The following sketch of his life is mainly taken from notes left by Judge S.—

John Summers was born in Maryland, in 1687, but came into Virginia at a very early age and settled on the Potomac where the town of Alexandria now stands. He often adverted to the fact that his cabin was the first building ever erected on the site of "ye ancient city" and that the first framed house ever put up in the place was prepared under his own direction and on his own land above "Trough Hill," and hauled to the site it was to occupy. "The land was then vacant, appropriations by grants not having extended far from the Bay and the mouths of the principal rivers. The country between that part of the Potomac and the Blue Ridge was then the Hunting Ground of the Indians, abounding in deer, bears, wolves, etc., and with wild turkeys and other game. His early years were spent in hunting, but as imigrants began to come in the usual struggle commenced between the settlers and the aborigines for the occupancy of the country, and Mr. Summers became an active leader and pioneer of the whites in the various campaigns undertaken for the removal of the Indians west of the Blue Ridge. When the country began to receive some population he married a Mrs. Blake, by whom he had five sons and five daughters.

"Hunting continued to be a favorite employment and in his latter days he took pleasure in regaling his friends with anecdotes of the chase, and of his Indian campaigns; with incidents connected with his early life.

"He seems to have been, like Boone, regardless of the acquisition of land, thinking the taxes, quit-rents, etc., more burdensome than the land would be beneficial. This he illustrated by a refusal of a deed from the patentee for the land on which Alexandria now

stands, and on which he resided, in exchange for a favorable rifle. He used to say he did not see how he was to provide for his family without his rifle, but as to land it was too plentiful to think of buying it. In after years he was much engaged by locators and surveyors in pointing out the best pieces of vacant lands and in conducting them through the forest districts with which he was familiar, and was at length prevailed upon by his friend Capt. West, the surveyor of the County, to locate a large tract for each of his sons, containing from four hundred to six hundred acres, but no persuasion would induce him to incur the expense and trouble of securing land for his daughters.

"He lived to see Alexandria become a place of some importance, to which he had given the name of Belle Haven, but it was afterwards changed in compliment to the family of Alexandria, who had then become possessed of large interests there, and the Legislature of Virginia recognized the latter name in 1762.

"He was too far advanced in life to take part in the war of the Revolution, but many of his descendants were in the army, some as officers and others in the ranks. In 1748 he is recorded among the freeholders of the county as voting for Major Lawrence Washington and Col. Colville for the House of Burgesses, July 16th, 1765, he and his five sons voted for George Washington and John West for the same office, and again at a general election December 1st, 1768, the same gentlemen were voted for and the same number of Summers' supported them.

"He was a man of very robust constitution, broad in the chest and powerful in limb. He retained his faculties in a remarkable degree and to the time of his death was appealed to on all questions of owners or boundaries of the early surveys. Within the last ten years of his life he was accustomed to walk six to eight miles in a day attended by a great-grandson, (Lewis Summers). About one year before his death a severe fall disabled him and he was thereafter confined to his bed when the recital of the liturgy and the prayers of the Church occupied his time when alone. He had been for some time patiently awaiting the summons and his last moments were calm and unclouded. On the evening of his death he had supped as usual and was heard singing a psalm of the Church and repeating the evening prayers. A few minutes afterward it was discovered that his spirit had taken its flight to the bosom of his God."

The American Museum of the year 1791 has the following notice of his death: "Died December 4th, near Alexandria, Va., Mr. John Summers, aged 103 years. He has left descendants of the fourth generation amounting to four hundred persons."

He is buried near Alexandria in the family burying ground of his son Francis, where the memorial stone which marks his grave is standing to this day. Many of his descendants are also buried there and the cemetery is reserved both by deed and the will of Francis Summers "for a possession of a burying place" to the latest generation. Only the gravestones of two others are left standing, however, the others having been destroyed by federal troops during the late war when the house was used as a hospital and for officer's quarters.

Francis Summers, the youngest son of John, and the grand-father of Lewis Summers, was born in Fairfax County, Virginia, March 3rd, 1732, and died at his country seat of Summer Grove, four miles west of Alexandria, October 14th, 1800. He married Mrs. Jane Charlton, whose maiden name was Watkins, by whom he had six sons and two daughters. She was born in 1735 and died August 22nd, 1814.

Francis led the quiet, uneventful life of a "Virginia Planter," as he styles himself in his will, on his estate and died honored and esteemed by all who knew him. For many years he held the office of magistrate, then an office of much greater importance than at the present day, the duties of which he discharged with untarnished reputation. Like his parents, he and his wife were devoted members of the P. E. Church and communicants of old Christ Church Alexandria where he was a vestryman.

The children of Francis and Jane Summers were George, William, Francis, Samuel and Thomas, sons, and Jane and Susanah, daughters.

George, the eldest son was born October 5th, 1758, in Fairfax County, Virginia, and died January 10th, 1818, at Walnut Grove, Kanawha County. He married in 1776 Miss Ann Smith Radcliffe, of Fairfax and five sons and five daughters were born to them:

Lewis, born Nov. 7, 1778. Died August 27, 1843.

Collin, born Oct. 7, 1784. Died July 8, 1782.

Jane Amelia, born Oct. 17, 1785. Died Jan. 8, 1862.

Elizabeth, born December 21, 1787. Died Jan. 8, 1877.
Ann Matilda, born Nov. 7, 1789. Died Oct. 25, 1863.
Ferdinand, born ———. Died Jan. 24, 1792.
Celina Louise, born Dec., 1793. Died August 12, 1875.
Sydney Lucy, born April 5, 1797. Died Oct. 6, 1883.
Albert Smith, born Jan., 1801. Died Feb. 5, 1824.
George William, born March 4, 1804. Died Sept. 19, 1868.

Mrs. Summers survived her husband twenty-five years and died at Walnut Grove, Kanawha County, Virginia, July 23d, 1843, aged 84 years.

The earlier and more active portion of Col. George Summers' life were spent in his native county of Fairfax where he combined the management of his large farm and numerous slaves, with many public duties which devolved upon him. His son Lewis says of him that in all their relations in life "he manifested a vigorous and correct understanding with an integrity the most inflexible." He several times represented his county in the general Assembly at Richmond and was a member of the constitutional convention prior to 1800. Like his father he was a magistrate of many years standing and his decisions were always repected and approved. He filled also the office of sheriff, a position involving much greater responsibility than at the present day.

Early in the century he began to think of a home in the "far west" for his young and growing family and in 1810 he undertook the journey on horse-back, accompanied by his oldest daughter Jane, and following the route previously marked out by his son Lewis, came into the Kanawha valley. They went down to the mouth of the river and as far down the Ohio river as the town of Guyandotte, and returning from thence continued the journey up the same to beyond Wheeling. From here they returned to their home near Alexandria. Think of one of the young ladies of the present day taking this long and wearisome journey on horseback: yet this faithful daughter often spoke of it as one of the most delightful experiences of her life. Her admiration of the wild and beautiful scenery through which they passed with the companionship of a father whom she loved with more than ordinary devotion, made it always a most pleasing recollection to her. This tour of inspection resulted in the purchase of the Walnut Grove estate, a

tract of land on the Kanawha river nearly three miles in length and it is somewhat phenominal that most of it is still owned by Col. Summers' grandchildren, nearly a hundred years from the time it came into his family.

In the spring of 1813 he came to take possession of the new home and to prepare it for the reception of wife and children. Knowing that he must depend upon himself for everything, he brought with him a number of his negro men and two or three white men of experience. The trees were felled, crops planted, a comfortable house erected and stores of every kind provided. This included the purchase of a flock of sheep and the growing of flax and cotton the product of which was to be made into clothing. Even the burial place was selected and a quantity of Walnut lumber prepared, and placed to season, so as to be in readiness when death should visit the little colony. In the autumn of the same year he went back to Virginia to bring his family and knowing that in early spring the master's eye must be over farm operations, he determined upon a winter journey and early in December, with those dear to him, made the slow and tedious passage through the almost trailless forests of the Blue Ridge, the valley of Virginia, surmounting the Alleghanies and through the canons of the New River. The calvacade consisted of Col. Summers and three of his daughters on horseback, a strongly built "carry-all" in which were bestowed Mrs. Summers and the younger children, a two-wheeled vehicle called a *Gig*, in which his daughter, Mrs. Ann Matilda Millan, was taking her bridal journey with her newly made husband Mr. Lyle Millan, followed by covered wagons filled with negro women and children, furniture, etc. In one of these, fitted for the purpose, the ladies sometimes slept when "camping out." These with Mr. Thomas Summers, Col. Summers' brother, and a few negro men composed the party, and in January, 1814, after great perils and hardships, they arrived at "haven where they would be."

Col. Summers lived to see the new home fairly established and his family somewhat accustomed to its new surroundings, and January 10th, 1818, was gathered to his Fathers in the confidence of "a certain, religious and holy hope." He was the first to be laid in the cemetery of his own selection but, with one exception, all his family now rest beside him.

Lewis Summers, the eldest son of Col. George Summers, and Ann Smith Radcliffe his wife, was a native of Fairfax County, Virginia. His earlier years were spent on his father's farm and his education, a liberal one for that time, was acquired in Alexandria at a private school kept "for the sons of gentlemen", but by whom is not now known. His father being eminently a man of affairs and residing near A— Lewis was early called to his assistance and proved himself most effücient. In the intervals of other business he pursued his law studies, but the name of his preceptor has been lost. He was admitted to the bar when about 22 years of age and at once

JUDGE SUMMERS.

took his place as a young man of great promise, both in his chosen profession and in political life. Coming into activity under the administration of John Adams, he espoused the Republican cause with great earnestness. He eagerly threw himself into the canvass for Thomas Jefferson and had the great pleasure to see him triumphantly elected. These principles he ever afterwards maintained, but in later years he was called a *Whig*. This party title was said to be derived from the first letters of the sentence "We hope in God" and in many things beside politics it became the motto of his life.

The office of Marshal of Alexandria was a much coveted honor among the young men of the place and he was chosen to fill it. It seems to have differed somewhat from that of mayor of the present day and involved control of the military companies of the town as well as much greater display. Mr. Summers, although a bachelor, took a house, furnished it handsomely and entertained extensively. Some mementoes of this period of his life are still retained in his family, among them a silver punch ladle owned by Mrs. Russell G. Quarrier, a grand niece.

Although successfully pursuing his profession in the city of A— his thoughts turned to the western country as offering a wider field of usefulness and activity, and actuated by his father's wishes, as well, to find a home for his family in the same region, he left his home June 22, 1808, on horseback, to seek a location west of the Alleghenies. On this journey he kept a minute journal which was published in the "Southern Historical Magazine for Feb., 1892, and from it much information would be gained by his father as to routes, distances, prices of land, titles, etc. Inspecting Charleston and the Kanawha Valley to the mouth of the river, he spent a few days at Gallipolis. Thence he travelled northward to Wellsburg, where he visited his sister, Mrs. Robert Lowriton, and Aug. 22d, started homeward across the northern part of the state. In due time he reached home and made his report, having travelled almost continually on horseback for over two months.

In the fall of the same year he made his final removal to the west and settled in Gallipolis. Although his residence there only extended over a few years, his vigorous and well informed mind at once impressed itself upon the community. He filled several positions of trust and was twice elected to the Senate of Ohio.

In 1815 he returned to Virginia and took up his residence in Charleston. He commenced the practice of law but combined it with other pursuits. The large business firm of "Bureau, Seales and Co.," afterwards "Summers, Seales and Co.," which was the leading establishment of the valley from 1816 to 1822, was of his inception and he was one of the largest partners. He also started one of the largest salt furnaces, then the leading industry of the valley, and it was in successful operation until 1833. This furnace he called by the name of his old parish in Fairfax, The Truro.

Soon after the death of his father in 1818 he prevailed upon his mother to join him in Charleston where his two younger brothers, Albert Smith and George William would have somewhat better educational advantages. These two brothers he thenceforward adopted as his own and assumed entire direction of their education and course in life. Albert, a most brilliant and promising young man, died unmarried in 1824.

In 1821, the boys having exhausted the schools of Charleston and being away at college, Mrs. Summers returned to the farm and thither her son Lewis accompanied her. It was ever afterwards his home and under his watchful and energetic care the "Grove" became the fair and beautiful estate which it was at the time of his death. In connection with this he built the largest lumber and flouring mill then in the valley, which was considered a wonderful undertaking for those days. The machinery was of the best obtainable and all the latest improvements were adopted. In connection with it was a dry goods store, a large warehouse and a packing house for meats. It was soon surrounded by small, but comfortable, houses for the occupancy of the employees and was quite a little village. The timber sawed in the mill, the fuel it consumed and that used in all the houses about it, was taken from his own forests, coal being then unknown outside of the salt works. Added to this were the cares and duties of his office and who can doubt that Judge Summers was a busy man!

Being of literary tastes he early began the accumulation of a library, both of law and miscellany, and long before his death it was siad to be the best in the state west of the Alleghenies. Barristers and men of learning would come from all over the western part of the State and spend days at the "Grove," searching out knotty points of law, preparing briefs, etc., for be it remembered books were not then the common articles which they afterwards became.

His home was ever the seat of hospitality, and it was no unusual thing for the quaint old house and the "office chamber" to be overflowing with guests. Especially was this so when the time came in spring and fall for the Judge to start out "on the circuit." This was always a great event at the "Grove" and preparation was always made beforehand for the invasion. The evening before, most of the lawyers from Charleston with some from Point Pleasant and

elsewhere, would arrive and all would become bustle and merriment. Sleeping accommodations were taxed to the utmost, some of the younger ones having to be content with a "shake down" in the parlor. Next morning the party was awake early for they must reach "Reece's tavern" by night. Breakfast over and a luncheon put up to be eaten at noon by some wayside spring, and they were mounted and off as happy as schooolboys out for a lark. Nor must "Bill," the Judge's faithful "body servant" who attended him every where, be forgotten. Great indeed would have been his indignation would he have supposed that even after the lapse of many years, an account of "Mars Lewis" would be written from which he should be excluded. He generally brought up the rear on his stout horse Selim and carrying large saddlebags stuffed with his master's belongings, books, papers, etc. At every one's service, always laughing and good natured, he was a general favorite with all and the party would have been incomplete without him. He was as well known on the circuit as the Judge himself and was an authority with the housekeepers as to tables, entertaining and the like. On one occasion, before the meal was served, he was observed making a mysterious communication to the different gentlemen, which proved to be advice to them not to eat *cake* at the table. On being asked why he informed them "They wanted a cake for dinner but didn't know how to make it so I made it for them, but I beat it up in the wash pan, where you all done washed your hands." He was much horrified when some of them told him they were hungry enough to eat a good big piece and trust to the wash pan having been properly cleansed. The courts of the circuit began in Cabell and from there to Logan, Fayette, Nicholas, Jackson, Wood and Mason, winding up with a five or six weeks seige in Kanawha. The bar at this place was made up of men of talent and experience and it was acknowledged to be the finest in the state outside of Richmond. For all this work, with its intervening duties Judge Summers received the munificent sum of fifteen hundred dollars per year

With all this, he was a man of great benevolence of character and was looked up to by his poorer neighbours as the one always to be relied upon in emergency. One instance of this is found in the fact that a store of standard medicines was always provided for their use, and he prepared himself to prescribe for all ordinary uses, furnishing remedies, the diet, etc., free of cost. Doctors were remote,

none nearer than Charleston, for whom a man must be sent on horseback involving a delay of twenty-four hours. On one occasion when Mrs. Summers, the Judge's mother, was alarmingly ill, "Bill" was sent to summon Dr. Patrick, the family physician. Arriving in C. some time after dark and making his errand known, the Doctor made ready to go, but on starting said, "Bill, I am worn out and I am going to sleep all the way. You must take care of me," and drawing up the collar of his coat and putting his hands on the pummel of his saddle he was soon in dreamland. Bill took the reins of both horses and only awakened him now and then to say, "Doctor, here is a tree across the path, the horses must jump it," or, "Doctor, here is a creek the horses must ford it." By day light they reached their destination and the life of the mistress of Walnut Grove was saved.

Judge S. never married but gave himself with untiring devotion to his mother and her family. Every member of it, even to nephews and nieces, felt they were objects of his tenderest care. His own will or pleasure was never a question where the good of any member of it was concerned.

He was early trained in religious truths by his parents as well as in the Sunday School of old Christ's Church, Alexandria. The lessons learned in childhood remained with him through life and he was, especially in his latter years a religious man. He was in sentiment an Episcopalian, "as his fathers were," and a devoted supporter of the Church. He was one of the little band which founded the church in Charleston, and it was a cherished object with him as long as he lived. In person he was commanding in figure, large and portly in form, with a countenance benevolent and intellectual.

The first public office held by him after his removal from Gallipolis, Ohio, to Charleston, Virginia, in 1815, was an appointment by Gov. James P. Preston, under seal of the state, to be one of the "principal assessors" to equalize the land tax in the district west of the Alleghany mountains." His associates in this office were James Hunter, William Armistead, Archibald Rutherford and Maj. Andrew Parks, and the "district" comprised the whole western portion of the State. He was engaged in this duty when he was elected to the Legislature from Kanawha county and served for the years 1817 and 1818.

In February, 1819, he was chosen by the Legislature of Virginia to be one of the Judges of the general Court and the Judge of the Kanawha Judicial Circuit, then but recently created. He was also ex-officio a member of the Board of Public Works, and these offices he held until the time of his death nearly twenty-five years afterwards.

As a Judge he was most pains-taking, laborious and of inflexible integrity. His decisions were rarely appealed and never successfully so, and in his large and difficult circuit his explanations of intricate points of law were of unquestioned authority. His learning and vigor of thought eminently qualified him for his position and he enjoyed the confidence of lawyers and people. The Judgeship was not then an elective office, but was an appointment for life from the highest body of lawmakers in the State. Those who held it engaged in no unseemly scramble to obtain it, and had therefore no political ends to serve, no adherents to reward. In this instance, the able, faithful and dignified men who received the honour preserved it in spotless purity to the end.

As a member of the Board of Public Works his efforts were untiring for the improvement and development of the whole state of Virginia and one has but to read his correspondence with the foremost men of the country, to be impressed with the fact of his enlarged and absorbing views on this subject.

Every vital interest of the commonwealth was pressed with signal ability, and it was said at the time of his death that Virginia owed to him more than to any other man, the great internal improvements which then existed within her borders. Many of these in the light of subsequent events, would seem to have been almost useless but as things then were they were deemed most essential. Foremost among these was the "James River and Kanawha Improvement Co." Under this charter given in 1832 the system of Kanawha navigation was commenced, but never carried out. The James River and Kanawha Canal was a work for which he labored long and with great zeal. The project of connecting the James with the navigable portions of the Kanawha by a continuous water way was one of absorbing interest to the great men of the State, and with them Judge S. never ceased to work for it. They little thought the time would come when the "iron horse" would be ploughing

his way through the canons of New River and the canal, if it had been built, would fall into decay! When the bill authorizing it passed the legislature in 1835 the event was celebrated with great rejoicing in Richmond. Bands and military companies were brought up from Norfolk, the streets were paraded, the legislature serenaded, etc.

In 1829 Judge S. was elected a member of the Convention called to revise the constitution of the State and the public prints said of him:

In that most remarkable assemblage of the age, the State Convention for the amendment of the Constitution of Virginia which sat in 1829-'30, the sterling, vigorous and practical character of Judge Summers' mind made him, before the close of its deliberations, one of the most useful, if not one of the most conspicuous members of that illustrious body. As the able champion of the true principles of elective government, he, in that assembly, performed services and acquired a reputation which will ever cause his memory to be cherished with warm and respectful affection by the people of Western Virginia.

He early foresaw the struggle which was to come between the northern and southern states, and under date of Feb. 6th, 1841, we find him writing to his friend, Wm. C. Rivis, of Virginia, and deploring the signs of the times. He says, "If our president-elect, Gen. Harrison, adopts a temporizing course, this band of deluded fanatics and unprincipled politicians from the north will be encouraged to press their criminal designs against the southern states to the utmost limit. It may not, and ought not, to be disguised that the south can never permit the people or government of the other states of the union to interfere in the relation of master and slave, and that every attempt of the kind is an act of moral treason against the south, and if persisted in may lead to consequences at the thought of which every good man, and lover of his country shudders." How fully the prediction was verified the fearful civil war was proof.

This inevitable element of discord was introduced into the legislature of Virginia as early as 1832 and a most exciting debate followed. One who was present wrote of it, "there has never been a more intensely interesting period in the history of this old common-

wealth. All reserve is thrown off and speeches are made which heretofore would have constituted high treason." This crisis passed away, but Judge Summers said then, "emancipation must come or the state will divide." In twenty years it did divide but he was mercifully spared witnessing the terrible ordeal through which his country, and his beloved Virginia, passed to accomplish it.

In the later years of his life he often had nominations for office almost forced upon him but he declined them all. While saying, "I hold that every man is bound to give to his country his best services in whatever way she may require them," he claimed that she had given him his life-work to do in a field he could not abandon. As late as 1841 he was urged to run for Governor of Virginia. Letters came to him from all parts of the State, and from the most prominent men, pressing it upon him and saying he need only to say he would accept the call and the work would be done for him, that he need not even leave his home to seek the office, but his answer was the same.

Early in 1843 his health began to decline and in August accompanied by his young nephew, afterwards Dr. Albert Edgar Summers, he went to the White Sulphur Springs, hoping that rest and the use of the waters would restore him. But it was not so to be. A sudden change for the worse took place and the life of the eminent jurist and statesman was ended August 27th. His faithful "Bill" was with him to the last, was untiring in his ministrations, and inconsolable for his loss.

The remains arrived in Charleston on Tuesday night, and the tolling of all the bells of the town conveyed to the citizens their first intelligence of their loss. Early on Wednesday morning, the improvised hearse which had brought the body from the Springs, continued its mournful journey followed now by sorrowing friends.

As it moved through the town on its way to Walnut Grove the bells were again tolled and the inhabitants, with uncovered heads, lined the sidewalks until the procession would no longer be seen. Bells were tolled at intervals during the day and at the hour of the funeral the next day. In this ceremony a large concourse of the citizens of the town and country assembled there and mingled their tears with those of the relatives.

MRS. ANN I. RYON.

LARGE LAND OWNERS.

There seems to have been a desire in many people to become large landowners in the early days of the United States, either from a disposition to own the earth, or as an investment for speculative purposes. In the wildlands of the western part of Virginia these persons located large tracts:

Robert Morris is charged with over 600,000 acres in Virginia, county of Kanawha, alone.

Henry Banks in several counties had patents for 488,000 acres.

Standish Ford had 210,000 acres.

Michael Gratz had 109,000 acres.

Levi Hollingsworth had 189,000 acres.

Hollingsworth & Pentecost had 171,000 acres.

Richard Smythe had 175,000 acres.

Wm. Tilton had 150,000 acres.

Alex Walcott had 100,000 acres.

The above persons, only nine of them, had over two million acres, in West Virginia, or more than one-eighth of the entitre State, and if all were together, would constitute the area of the largest county in the State.

These, however, were only a few of the very largest owners, and there were many that owned almost as much as those mentioned.

We doubt whether these investments were paying ones, even though they purchased the same at twenty-five cents per acre and paid taxes on the same at that valuation, as the accumulated interest and taxes would make the cost mount up faster than the increased value, especially after the entire western prairies were placed on the market.

Perhaps they did not expect the republican form of government to exist a great while and they were preparing to stand as the lords of the land, when the King should be crowned.

Geo. Washington as a Land Owner.

Mr. Nelson W. Evans, of Portsmouth, O., writes that Washington owned the following lands:

Lands in Ohio, 9,744 acres.

Lands in Maryland, 1,119 acres.

Lands in Pennsylvania, 234 acres.

Lands in New York, 1,000 acres.

Lands in Northwest Territory, 3,051 acres.

Lands in Kentucky, 5,000 acres.

And in Virginia: Loudon and Fauquier, 3,666 acres. Nedrich, 571 acres. Gloucester, 400 acres. Nausemond, 373 acres. Mt. Vernon, 9,227 acres.

In West Virginia: Ohio County, 587 acres. Little Kanawha, 2,314 acres. Berkeley, 22,236 acres. Hampshire, 240 acres. Ohio river, 2,448 acres. Opp. Big Bend, 4,395 acres. Mouth Great Kanawha, 10,990 acres. E. side Great Kanawha, 7,276 acres. Mouth Cole, Great Kanawha, 2,000 acres. Opp. Cole, Great Kanawha, 2,950 acres. Burning Springs, 125 acres.

The following appears from Patents:

In 1772, he obtained patents for 2,448 acres on East side Ohio in Botetourt county.

In 1773, 4,395 acres, same, Botetourt county.

In 1772, 2,314 acres on Ohio, in Botetourt county.

In 1773, 7,276 acres on Pocatalico, in Botetourt county.

In 1780, 250 acres Great Kanawha, in Greenbrier Co.

In 1784, 2,000 acres, Cole River, in Greenbrier Co.

In 1784, 2,950 acres, Great Kanawha, in Greenbrier Co.

He owned lots in Washington, Winchester and Alexandria.

Kanawha Land Books, 1797.

The earliest land book that has been preserved is that of the year 1797, and there is much in it that is interesting.

It seems to have been made by Josiah Harrison, Commissioner, composed of a few sheets of foolscap paper ruled into columns, giving the names of the owners, the number of acres, the value per acre, and then the total value for taxation, and then the amount of tax, assessed at the rate of "1-4 P. C." Take one line for instance: Arbuckle, Charles | 318 | 2-6 | 23-17-0 | 0-1-2 1-2, would read thus: Charles Arbuckle has 318 acres of land, valued at two shillings sixpence per acre, total value twenty-three pounds, seventeen shillings, and the tax at the rate of one-fourth of one per cent. amounts to one shilling two and one half pence. Isaac Moses was charged with twenty tracts of one thousand acres each, at the value of one shilling per acre and the tax at 1-4 P. C. what was his tax?

The next matter of interest that occurred, was the names of the lot owners—these books do not say where the lands are located, nor do they say where the lots were, but supposing in the year 1797, there were none other than in Charleston, up to the year 1800, the owners of lots were: Fleming, Cobb, Andrew Donnally, Jesse Bennett, Geo. Alderson, Chas. Donnally, Jas. Givens, Wm. Miller, Wm. McCulloch, O'Neal & Scott, Allen Prior, Jno. Reynolds, Lewis Tacket, John Young, David Lee, Wm. Owens, Geo. Tyler, Jas. Tyler, Isaac Tyler, Geo. Welch, Peter Alderson, Jas. McGee, Goodrich Slaughter, George See, Jas. VanBibber and Jas. Woodward.

On the said land books are names that are familiar: Geo. Washington, Andrew Lewis, Benjamin Wynkoop, Henry Van Meter, Thos. Upton, Thos. Taylor, John Shrewsbury, Conrad Smith, Reuben Slaughter, Jacob Skiles, Joseph Ruffner, Alex Quarrier, Levin Powell, Sam'l Pleasants, Benjn. Pollard, Geo. Muse, Len Morris, Hogg and Bullett's heirs, Shadrack Harriman, Andrew Donnally, Wm. Clendennin, Geo. Alderson, etc.

Washington a Salt Maker.

In the list of lands held by Washington, there will be noticed one called "Burning Springs 125 acres."

This name came from the fact that there was a pool of water which had the appearance of a spring, and there was a gas escape therefrom that was easily ignited and would burn continuously.

Washington became the owner of this tract of land, whether induced to secure it because of the miraculous appearance of burning water, or whether he saw the utility of this gas as a fuel, in a country where fuel was useful to the manufacture of salt, it is not alleged. This tract of land is on the Kanawha River a few miles above Charleston. In later years there was a salt furnace which used gas as a fuel, in this vicinity.

It is not claimed that it was exactly the General that became the manufacturer of salt at this place, but the following contract shows how near to him it was, which paper was furnished for our use by Col. A. F. Gibbens.

AGREEMENT TO MAKE SALT.

Laurence A. Washington with Benjamin F. Reeder.

Articles of Agreement entered into this thirty first day of Janu-

ary, 1814, between Laurence Augustine Washington of the County of Mason & State of Virginia of the one part & Benjamin Franklin Reeder, of the County of Kanawha & same state of the other part, Witness

1st. That the said Reeder having agreed with the said Washington to sink a gum & bore for salt water on the tract of land belonging to the said Washington, which lies in the said county of Kanawha & is known by the name of "Burning Springs" tract of land, further agrees & covenants, if he the said Reeder shall succeed in getting salt water, of the average strength of the waters of the salt works now in operation in the said county of Kanawha, or of such strength as to induce him the said Reeder to commence the making of salt therefrom, to give to the said Washington, his heirs, &c, the full sum of twelve hundred dollars, to be paid annually & for each year for & during the full term of seven years, for the use of the said salt water & of three fourths of the wood of the said tract of land (except as shall be hereafter excepted) to be used for the purpose of boiling the said salt waters to make salt therefrom, for & during the term of seven years fully to be complete & ended. The commencement of which term of seven years will be hereafter mentioned.

2nd. To prevent disputes as to the three fourths of the wood of the said tract of land, which the said Reeder is to have the use of for the purpose of making salt, if he shall succeed in getting salt water on said land, it is agreed that the whole of the wood land of the said tract (except that part of it which is in possession of John Morris & that part of it to which Jarrett & Fletcher have set up a fictitious claim) shall be actually surveyed & three fourths of the same shall be marked by metes and bounds, and laid off for the said Reeder, within which bounds he shall be confined. The fourth of the wood land thus reserved shall be laid off next the hills, or in any other equitable form & position as shall be agreed upon by the parties.

3d. The said Reeder binds himself to lose no time, nor to make any unnecessary delay in sinking his gum, boring for salt water & putting up his furnace, kettles, machinery, & houses necessary for the making of salt, if he shall succeed in finding salt water on the said tract of land; and it is agreed & covenanted by the said

Reeder that he will bore as deep into the rock, in which the salt water is generally found, as is usual at the salt works in the said county of Kanawha.

4th. The said Reeder binds himself, &c, not to cut or in any way destroy, burn or injure, or permit to be cut, burnt or injured, any of the timber or wood lying standing or being on the fourth of the wood land, reserved as above. But shall take it under his care & protection. He also agrees to take that part of the Burning Springs tract of land belonging to the said Washington to which Jarrett & Fletcher have set up a pretended illegal claim under his especial care & protection. For which purpose & for the more effectual protection thereof, the same is hereby put into the possession of the said Reeder. He further agrees that he will not himself, nor will he permit others to cut, burn or destroy, or in any way injure or remove from the premises, any of the wood or timber appertaining to the said land. That he will prevent if he can all persons whatever, let them act or pretend to act under what claim or pretended claim they may, from committing trespass, or in any way, using, or removing any of the wood lying, standing or being on the said land. That if he cannot prevent, he will give timely notice to the said Washington or his rep's, or his or their agents, or attorneys, of all persons who are hardy enough to disregard his warnings, that the law may be put in force against them.

5th. The said Reeder agrees to take the Burning Springs (as they are called) on the said tract of land under his protection. And if the gas, which rises from them should at any time be set on fire, to gratify the curiosity of visitors & be left burning that he will have the fire extinguished.

6th. The said Reeder agrees to leave the houses, machinery for raising the water &c, and for making salt in good repair, at the termination of this contract.

7th. He also agrees to deliver to the said Washington, or hired's, the kettles which he shall be using at the termination of this contract, in the order & condition they shall be in at the time, permitting them to receive no other injury, than the careful use of them in boiling the sadt water in them, to make salt shall produce to them.

8th. The said Reeder agrees that he will not transfer the rights

which this agreement may vest in him to any person whatever, either for the whole term of said agreement, or for any part thereof, on any condition or pretext whatever, without the *written* consent of the said Washington or his rep's. Nor will he rent out the said salt works, nor on any condition permit any one to make salt in his furnace, or to use any of the wood of the said land for the purpose of making salt or for any other purpose whatever, without the *written* consent of the said Washington or his rep's.

9th. The said Reeder further agrees & binds himself & rep's that he will not sell, give away, or in any way dispose of any of the wood which is growing, lying, standing or being on the said tract of land, or any part thereof. Nor will he permit any one whatever, on any pretext or claim whatever, to take off, or remove from the said land, or any part of it, any of the wood of the said land, or to burn, or in any other way to injure or destroy any of the timber or wood of the said land or any part thereof, if he can prevent it. To do which he agrees to use his best efforts & exertions & if they fail he agrees to give immediate & timely notice of the fact & of the party or parties trespassing, to the said Washington or his rep's or his or their attorney. And it is understood & agreed upon by the parties hereto that the whole of the said Burning Springs tract of land, (except that part thereof which is in the possession of the above named John Morris) is included in the article, as well the three fourths of the wood land which the said Reeder is to have the use of for making salt should he succeed in getting salt water on said lands, as the fourth of the wood land reserved as above, & that part of said land claimed by the said Jarrett & Fletcher.

10th. The said Reeder agrees not to keep any tenants on the said land. That he will not permit any cabbins to be built on it, or if already built to be occupied by any persons whatever, unless they are in his employment as a part of the necessary hands to make salt. In fine he agrees & binds himself &c, not to permit the wood allotted to his use, for the making of salt to be burnt in more than two chimnies, or in other words he will not keep or permit to be kept more than *two* fires burning at one time, except the fires *necessary* to carry on the salt making business. And in using it for that purpose he agrees that no waste or unnecessary consumption of it shall take place.

11th. The said Washington agrees that the said Reeder shall have the cultivation of all the cleared land of said tract which is not in dispute between himself & others & of all the land which the said Reeder shall rightfully clear under this contract during the full term thereof, without paying anything annually therefor in addition to the twelve hundred dollars, which the said Reeder is to pay annually to the said Washington & the other covenants of this agreement.

12th. The said Washington reserves to himself, his rep's &c. the right to enter upon & take possession of the fourth of the wood land, which is reserved by this contract, & also of the Burning Springs on the same which are nearest the present state road, & of one acre of land around them, at any time during the term of this contract & to have free egress & ingress to the same from the public road.

13th. The said Reeder agrees to have fifty acres of the cleared land of the said tract under a good & substantial fence or inclosure of legal height, at the expiration of this contract. Twenty acres of the said fifty he agrees shall be left well set in timothy or clover grass, & under a separate fence from the other thirty.

14th. The said Washington agrees that if the legal tribunal of his country shall silence & put to rest the claim set up by the said Jarrett & Fletcher to a part of his land as aforesaid, by declaring & pronouncing the said claim to be illegal, void & of no effect (which the said Washington is satisfied will *ultimately* be the case) & shall restore him the said Washington again to the full exercise of all his rights of ownership to & over the said disputed land, before the termination of this contract, then & in that case, he will give the said Reeder the use of three fourths of the wood which shall then be on the said disputed land, for the balance of the term of this contract which shall be then unexpired. In the use of which wood the said Reeder is to be governed in *every* respect by the same rules restrictions & reservations, as are above annexed to the use of the other wood granted him by this contract.

15th. It is distinctly understood by the said Washington & Reeder that this contract is a *special* & *conditional one*, & to go into operation & be binding on them on the following conditions:

First. That the said Reeder shall obtain on the said land or un-

der the surface thereof salt water of such strength & quantity as to induce the said Reeder to tube his well & fix fix it in every respect, with the usual & necessary machinery to elevate & convey the salt water to his kettles, to put up a furnace with the usual number of kettles, & all the houses necessary for carrying on the salt making business as it ought to be, all of which houses, furnace machinery &c, are to be put up on the land of the said Washington.

Second. That the said Reeder shall give the said Washington approved security for the performance of his the said Reeder's part of this contract, in all its particulars.

As soon as these two conditions, just above written shall be complied with on the part of the said Reeder, this contract will become building on the said Washington & Reeder, & will confirm to the said Reeder the following special rights & those only, To wit: The use of the salt water he shall obtain on the said land; the use of three fourths of the wood on said land (with the exceptions & under the restrictions above mentioned) to be applied to the purpose of making salt from said water, & fire wood for two fires; the cultivation of all the cleared land (with the above exception & the possession of the said cleared land & wood land to enable him to derive the full benefit of the water wood & cultivation of the same for & during the full term of this contract. Which term is seven years fully to be complete & ended & to commence on the day the said Reeder beginnsto boil the salt water in his furnace. And in the enjoyment of these rights & privileges, the said Reeder is bound or is to be governed by the restrictions, conditions & reservations above mentioned.

16th. The annual payment which the said Reeder has hereby covenanted to make is to be done at the times & manners following: The first payment of twelve hundred dollars is to be made at the end of twelve calendar months from the day the said Reeder first boils the salt water in the kettles or his furnace, & the like sum of twelve hundred dollars is to be paid at the end of each succeeding year for the space of six years after the first payment is made, making in all seven payments of twelve hundred dollars for each & every payment.

In testimony whereof we, the said Washington & Reeder have here-

unto set our hands & affixed our seals the day & year first above written.

LAU WASHINGTON. (Seal.)
B. L. REEDER. (Seal.)

Signed & sealed in presence of

.....
.....

Appendix.

17th. It is agreed upon the parties to this covenant that instead of the within named Benj'n F. Reeder being obliged to give personal security (in the manner and form described and set out in the 15th article of this agreement) to the within named Laurence A. Washington for the faithful performance of his part of the agreement, machinery and metal at any time to the said Washington or his he the said Reeder his heirs or assigns will give up all his works representatives that he or they commits or commit a breach of any of the covenants of the said agreement, or fails to pay the rent when it becomes due, provided the said Washington or his Rep's shall demand the same. And if the said Reeder his heirs or assigns shall make any breach of the said contract, or infringe any of the covenants thereof or shall fail to pay his or their rent annually as it becomes due, it shall be lawful for the said Lau. A. Washington his heirs, &c to reenter in and upon the before described premises and repossess himself of the same, together with all works, machinery, metal and other property found in and upon the before described premises, and the same from thenceforth to hold as his own property free and freed from all claim and demand of the said Reeder his heirs or assigns for and on account of the same, and in as full and beneficial a manner to the said Washington as if the covenants and agreements aforesaid had never been made.

18th. And the said Benj'n F. Reeder for himself his heirs and assigns, covenants to and with the said Lau. A. Washington, his heirs, &c, that in event of his failing to pay the rent aforesaid at the times and in the manner hereinbefore provided for, or if the said Reeder shall commit any breach of the covenants set out in this agreement; that then, and in either of the said events happening, the said Reeder shall surrender up the before described premises and every part thereof, together with all works, furnaces, metal and

machinery upon the same to the said Washington, if by him required and demanded, under the penalty of two thousand Dollars.

19th. In lieu of the second condition of the fifteenth article of the covenant the parties thereto agree to substitute the following: That the said Reeder binds himself, his heirs and assigns to go on without any unnecessary or unavoidable delay, to use all proper means and efforts to procure salt water on the said land. He agrees to bore a hole in the rock of a diameter at least as large as any salt well now existing in the County of Kanawha, to the distance of three hundred feet from the surface of the said rock. That to the above named depth in the rock in which the salt water is found, he binds himself &c, to make a fair experiment to get salt water and if he succeeds, he binds himself &c, to tube his well and fix it in every respect with the usual proper and necessary machinery to draw the water therefrom to be boiled for salt.

He further agrees, if he succeeds in getting Salt water of the quality and quantity above described (in article the first of this agreement) that he will commence the making of salt therefrom as soon as the necessary machinery to draw and convey the water to his kettles or furnace can be built and put into operation.

In testimony whereof the parties hereto have set their hands and affixed their seals this 14th day of March 1814.

LAU WASHINGTON. (Seal.)
B. F. REEDER. (Seal.)

Attest:
A. STOCKTON.
AND'W PARKS.

Be it remembered that I, Benjamin Franklin Reeder of the county of Kanawha and State of Virginia for and in consideration of the sum of one dollar current money of the U. S. to me in hand paid, do hereby assign and transfer to Aaron Stockton of said county, all my rights and interest, accruing under, or derived from the foregoing agreements, to have and to hold the same to the said Aaron Stockton his heirs or assigns, subject to all the limitations, conditions, and restrictions therein contained, for and during the full time of the said lease, and the said Benj'n F. Reeder and the said Aaron Stockton do for themselves their heirs, &c, covenant to and with the said Laurence A. Washington, his heirs and assigns, and to

and with every of them, that the said Aaron Stockton shall in all things keep and perform all and singular the covenants, stipulations, conditions and reservations to be kept and performed by the said B. F. Reeder according to the true intent and meaning of the same, in the same full and ample manner that the said Aaron Stockton would be bound to perform the same, if the original contract and agreement had been made by and between the said Laurence A. Washington and Aaron Stockton, and the name of Stockton inserted throughout the same, instead of the name of Benj'n F. Reeder.

In testimony whereof the parties have hereunto set their hands and affixed their seals this 14th day of September 1814.

B. F. REEDER. (Seal.)
A. STOCKTON. (Seal.)

Attest:
AND'W PARKS.

I, Laurence A. Washington do hereby give my consent to the above transfer of the rights, &c, to the annexed and above articles, by the above written Benj'n F. Reeder, to the above written Aaron Stockton, in consideration of the stipulations and conditions contained in the said transfer agreed to be performed by the said Stockton, and of the subsequent conditions entered into by the said Stockton and myself.

In testimony whereof I hereto have set my hand and affixed my seal this 14th day of September 1814.

LA'U. A. WASHINGTON. (Seal.)

Attest:
AND'W PARKS.

It is agreed upon by the above named Aaron Stockton and Lau. A. Washington that the said Stockton shall go on from the date hereof to bore three hundred feet into rock if it shall be necessary. That he shall faithfully prosecute his work to this depth in the rock without any unavoidable delay unless he should obtain salt water sooner of such quality and quantity as shall induce him to make salt therefrom, or of such quality and quantity as is described in the first article of the annexed agreement. In either of which cases the said Stockton binds himself to begin making Salt from the said water as soon as the necessary machinery can be built and put into operation. That the rent of twelve hundred dollars shall be payable

in twelve months after the day the said Stockton begins to boil the above water to make Salt therefrom, and annually thereafter for the full term of seven years, agreeably to the covenants as above recited in the annexed agreement. And it is further agreed that if the said Stockton shall fail to get Salt water of the character described in the annexed agreement, within the three hundred feet above spoken of, then and in that case the said Stockton shall pay to the said Washington an annual rent of One thousand dollars for the use of the wood secured to the within named Benj'n F. Reeder, in the annexed covenant to boil any water he may procure the use of to make Salt therefrom, in the furnace built on the land of the said Washington.

And it is agreed upon by the parties hereto, that the rent of One thousand dollars, shall be payable at the end of twelve months from the day the said Stockton shall have finished the boring of the above three hundred feet (if it shall become necessary to go that depth) and annually thereafter for the full term of seven years, which day shall not be unnecessarily procrastinated or designedly delayed.

In testimoney whereof the parties hereto have hereunto set their hands and seals this 14th day of September 1814.

LAU'E A. WASHINGTON. (Seal.)
A. STOCKTON. (Seal.)

Attest:
AND'W PARKS.
B. F. REEDER.

VIRGINIA STUDENTS AT ATHENS, OHIO.

The following list of names of students from Virginia that attended school at Athens College, Ohio, together with the years in which they graduated, and the A. M. denotes the degree obtained. Another list is appended of those that attended, but who are not known to have graduated.

To collect the same required much research and delving into the old musty records. These do not pretend to be absolutely correct, but they are all that could be found.

Ezra Walker, A. M., 1829.
George William Summers, A. M., 1830.
Isaac Hoge, A. M., 1833.
Wm. M. McElhenny, 1834.
Thomas Creigh, A. M., 1835.
Lewis A. Alderson, A. M., 1835.
Andrew Parks, A. M., 1836.
James H. Couch, 1840.
John James Hoge, A. M., 1845.
John Marsh, A. M., 1845.
John Blair Hoge, A. M., 1845.
William Lockhart Hindman, 1858.
Ulysses Wesley Flesher, A. M., 1862.
Charles Henry Collier, A. M., 1866.
Spicer H. Patrick, A. M., 1868.
Kruger Wormley Smith, A. M., 1870.
Attended in 1832:
Lewis D. Wilson.
William A. Marquis.
Thos. J. Bierce.
Wm. G. Caperton.
John A. Caperton.
John Parks.
Samuel J. Anderson.
Allen Sebrell.
Orloff Iane.
Attended in 1843:
J. M. Christian.
J. B. Patrick.
Seth Shepherd.
A. A. Watson.
Albert Laidley.
In 1850:
Charles Morris.
John Morris.
James Watson.

MISS JULIA BARBER.

FORMER NAMES OF WEST VIRGINIA TOWNS.

Some of the towns of West Virginia would not now be recognized by their old names, and who can tell why they were changed, and who can tell why some are not changed?

Fairview, of Hancock county, was New Manchester, and New Cumberland was Vernon.

Wellsburg was Charles Town.

Moundsville was Elizabethtown.

Fairmont was Middletown.

Pruntytown was first Cross-Reads, then Williamsport.

Weston was Preston, then Fleshersville.

Morgantown was Borough of Morgantown.

Beverly was Borough of Beverly.

Gerrardstown was Middletown.

Lewisburg was Fort Savanna.

Charleston was Fort Lee, then Charlestown.

Parkersburg was "The Point," then Newport.

Shepherdstown was New Mecklenburg.

Point Pleasant was Fort Randolph.

Berkeley Springs was Bath.

Aracoma was Lawnsville.

Suton was Suttonsville.

St. Albans was Philippi, Coalsmouth, Kanawha City.

Malden was Terra Salis, then Salines.

Ravenswood was Ravensworth.

There was once a town called Monroe, where is it?

W. S. LAIDLEY.

THE LATE REV. M. D. DUNLAP, AND HIS ANCESTRY.

BY REV. W. T. PRICE.

Descended from Scottish Noblemen this Eminent Man Leaves an Enviable Record Behind in Pocahontas.

The subject of this article is the Rev. Mitchell D. Dunlap, who spent forty-eight years of his remarkably useful life in our county. No one person has ever exerted an influence for the best interests

of our people, superior to what he did during the long residence among us, from 1845 to 1893. Many young men of Pocahontas county trained by his precepts and example, became the foremost citizens of their day, as business and professional characters. The same is true in regard to quite a number from adjacent counties.

In reference to his ancestry we learn from M. A. Dunlap, his nephew and namesake, and with whom he passed the latter years of his life, that the Rev. Mr. Dunlap's paternal ancestor was Robert Dunlap, Sr. This ancestor with three brothers were the younger sons of a Scottish nobleman.

By the law of entail they were disinherited and to improve their fortunes, migrated to Pennsylvania. From Pennsylvania they came to the Valley of Virginia and located in Augusta county.

The eldest of the four brothers just mentioned was the Captain Dunlap, who was with Andrew and Charles Lewis in much of their border warfare operations. It is not known certainly what became of this Captain Dunlap, but there are plausible reasons for believing that he or his immediate descendants migrated to Ohio. William Dunlap, another of the ancestral quartette, went to Kentucky, and is the ancestor of the Dunlap relationship in Kentucky and Tennessee.

Robert Dunlap, Sr., after being in the Indian wars along the border, was in the battle of Point Pleasant, October 10, 1774. During the Revolutionary war he went into service with his brother, name not handed down, under Captain Bratton, a relative.

At the battle of Guilford Court House the Southern militia were routed, leaving that part of the field, where Capt. Bratton was engaged, exposed to a flanking movement made by the British, which forced him back upon the main body of the American army.

Capt. Bratton reported that as he fell back, he noticed Robert Dunlap, Sr., loading and firing his long-range mountain rifle, at the flanking party. The Captain also reported that he told Robert Dunlap the day was lost and that he had better come off with the rest, this he refused to do and was never seen or heard of since, and so must have been killed or captured.

The self-sacrificed veteran, Robert Dunlap, Sr., left five sons and three daughters to mourn the said tidings from Guilford Court House, in their pioneer home in the Virginia valley.

All of the sons migrated westward except Robert Dunlap, Jr., and all the daughters excepting Mrs. Samuel McCutchen, who was the mother of the late Robert D. McCutchen, near Dunmore, in upper Pocahontas.

The wife of Robert Dunlap, Sr., and the widowed mother of the five sons and three daughters just referred to, was Mary Gay. She was a near relative of Gen. Geo. Rogers Clark and Col. William Clark, and also connected with the ancestry of the Gays, of Pocahontas county, but how closely is not positively known to the writer.

Robert Dunlap, Jr., the father of Rev. M. D. Dunlap, married Martha Graham, daughter of Jno. Graham, of Augusta county, and lived on the old homestead.

Mrs. Dunlap's father, John Graham, according to David Graham's opinion, was a descendant of the Earl of Montrose. M. A. Dunlap states it was th eopinion of his mother, Mrs. Paulina Dunlap, that John Graham, was a descendant of the Earl of Preston. It was also believed by the Graham relationship that from a collateral line of Grahams, the Earl of Dundee originated. This person is more widely known by the epithet, "Infamous Claverhouse." John Graham, the maternal grand-father of Rev. M. D. Dunlap, was a son of John Graham, Sr., the grand-father of Lanty Lockridge, Sr., late of Knapps Creek and progenitor of the Lockridge relationship with "Claverhouse," the Virginia Grahams, had but little to say of their ancestry.

He also writes as his opinion, that most of what has been told of the "infamous Claverhouse," was false, as it is known much of it was. For illustration the story of Earl Dundee's league with Satan, by whom he was made invulnerable, and furnished the Earl from his own dark stables the terrible black horse that was invulnerable as his rider and that the Earl of Dundee was finally killed by a silver bullet in the moment of victory at Kille Krankie.

One interesting fact about Robert Dunlap, Jr., and his wife, Martha Graham, they were born on the same day of the week and month, and the same year, and their first children, Robert and John, were twins.

If there be another such coincidence, who knows of it?

These persons were the parents of four daughters, Nancy G., who became Mrs. Rev. James Templeton; Martha, who became Mrs.

Lewis Bratton; Isabella, who became Mrs. James Walker; and Margaret Graham, who never married.

The sons were John and Robert, the twins, Mitchell and Charles. In other sketches of the Dunlap relationships particulars are mentioned, for which there is neither time nor space in a personal article like this, to repeat.

Robert Dunlap, Jr., is remembered as a person eminent for his devotional character. At one period in the history of Rocky Spring church an impulse to special prayer, came upon him and also upon two young ladies, the Misses Montgomery. The two young ladies formed an association for special prayer for the Spirit's reviving power meeting at a school house, where one was teaching. Mr. Dunlap selected the barn for his closet of prayer. Unknown to each other these parties spent much time in tearful prayers and supplication and a pentecostal season followed that amazed ministers and people for and near. To very many a more unexpected event rarely occurs. One of the fruits of that revival was the subject of this sketch.

In reference to Rev. M. D. Dunlap, whose long residence in our county, deserves recognition due by common consent to one of the most useful and influential lives ever passed among our people, it will be remembered that he was a native of Augusta county, born January 16, 1809, and reared on a farm on the west bank of the Big Calf Pasture river, seven or eight miles above Goshen. At this parental homestead he was devoted to farming pursuits until his majority and several years thereafter.

Having become impressed that it was his duty to preach, he began his studies at Lexington, Va., and upon graduation entered Union Theological Seminary at Hampden Sydney. When completing his studies at college and seminary after six or seven years of continuous effort ,he was licensed by Lexington Presbytery and soon after his licensure invitations to French Creek, West Virginia, and to Oak Grove church in lower Pocahontas were received by the same post.

Upon visiting both places he decided to locate at Hillsboro as stated supply of the Huntersville and Oak Grove churches and principal of Pocahontas Academy, a flourishing classical school established by Rev. Joseph Brown in 1840-41.

The ministerial service began in May, 1845, and continued for twenty-five years. After severing his relationship as supply of these two churches and relinquishing his position as principal of the Academy, he located on a farm in the vicinity of Hillsboro.

CORRECTIONS AND ANNOUNCEMENTS, ETC.

In the last April number, page 113, it is stated that the second wife of Major Isaac Hite was *Ann T. Massey*, it should read, Ann T. Maury.

On page 108, it is said that Mrs. Eleanor Bowman was born in Berkeley county; it should read Jefferson county.

She was born at Hopewell, near Leetown, and died May 19, 1903, in the ninetieth year of her age, near Strasburg, Va.

We also announce the death of Mrs. A. C. Holderby, who is mentioned on said page 113, of said April Magazine, which occurred June 23, 1903.

We also announce to the members of the West Virginia Historical Society, that the returns from the circulars sent out by the Board, for "aid and comfort" to supply the need created by the veto of the Governor, are coming in and we are encouraged to believe that neither the Society nor the Magazine will be permitted to die. We hope to publish the names of our helpers, and we desire a greater list than we have at present. Come on.

"Entered May 19, 1903, at Charleston, West Virginia, as Second Class matter, under Act of Congress of July 16, 1894."

Vol. 3. OCTOBER 1903. No. 4.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine

Quarterly.

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year. - - - - - - - - - $1.00
SINGLE COPIES. - - - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

THE TRIBUNE PRINTING COMPANY,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS FOR OCTOBER, 1903.

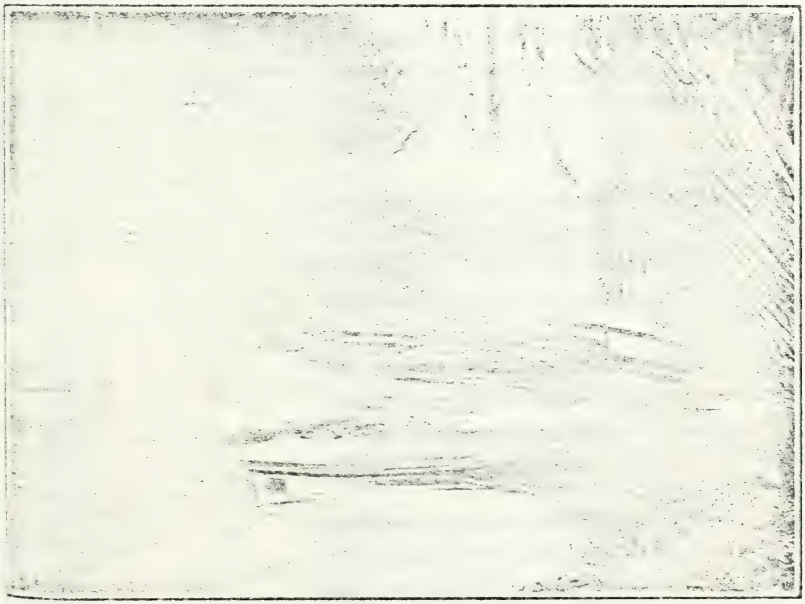
Evett's Run.....by *W. D. Briscoe.* 265
The Significance of Scotch-Irish History..... by *Rev. W. T. Price.* 274
The Houstons of Monongalia..... by *R. R. Sweet.* 281
John Jones.....by *W. S. Laidley.* 295
Moravian Missionaries in Va. in 1749 314
Shepherd Family Item.....by *J. T. Holmes.* 288
Pioneer Settlement of West Virginia..... by *W. S. Laidley.* 289
Kanawha County Early Records.....by *W. S. Laidley.* 310
List of Deceased Members of W. Va. His. Soc.....*Librarian.* 313
Notes, Memoranda and Corrections, &c 316

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

EVETT'S RUN.

BY W. D. BRISCOE.

In mossy pool the Heron croaks,
  Near by old Norborne's wall;
I see once more the sturdy oaks,
  That wave 'round Antler Hall.



EVETT'S RUN.

To-day the wooded hills have caught,
  The golden autumn's gleam;
And ah, with what delighted thought,
  I turn to Evett's stream.

For there I sought in fervid dreams,
Love's castle walls to scale;
And hope devised a thousand schemes,
By which I might prevail.

Unto the brook, whose waters steal
In murmers soft and low,
I, impassioned, made appeal,
More strong than any know.

For oft I walked beside the brook
And told my love in part;
Until its voice—(why not?) and look—
Brought comfort to my heart.

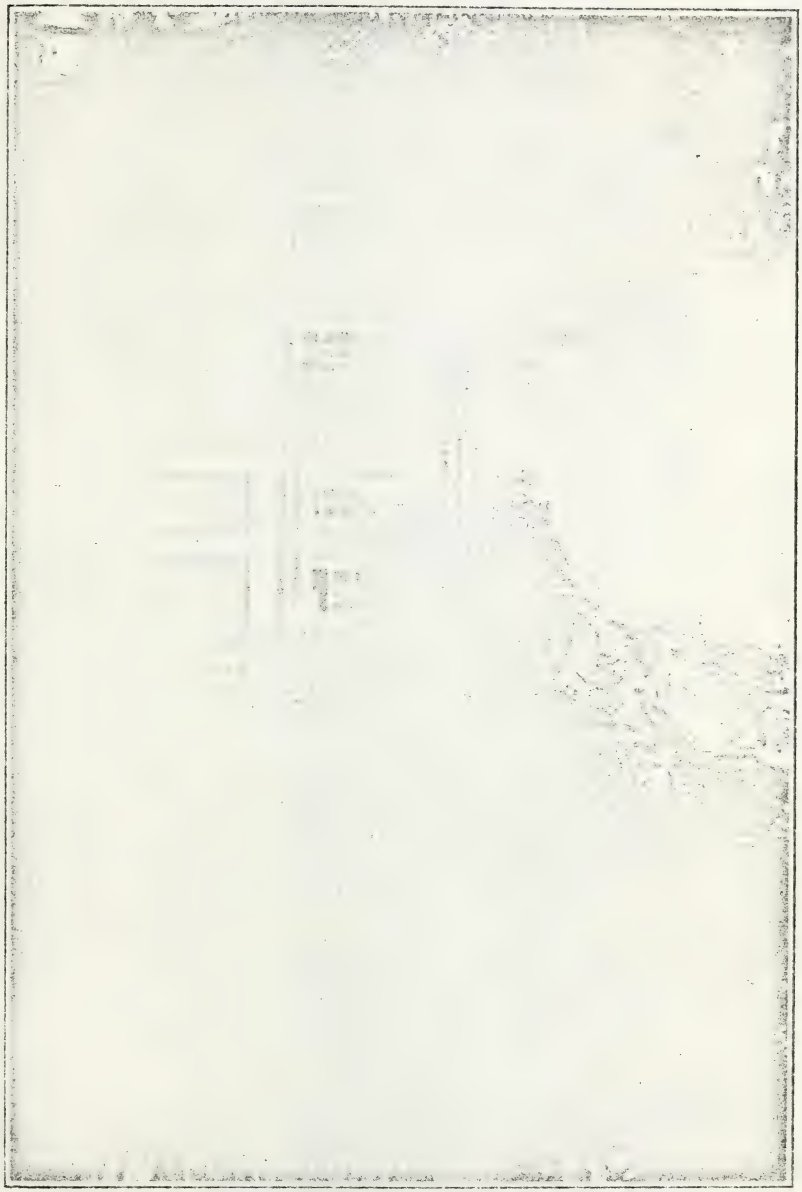
Tho' what was breathed that sunny morn,
None else I ween may ken;
I found it still of murmurs born—
A babbler in the glen.

For since the voice—where oft I sit
And list the murmurs low,
I've thought best to question it?
And learn what it may know.

"Oh, you come from Evett's race
And fructify the land;
Tell me of her, whose name I trace,
Thus, on thy banks of sand.

Say thou, along whose flow'ry bank,
Her foot steps light and free;
Hast ever seen in any rank,
So fair a maid as she?"

"'Tis quite ten thousand years, and more
Since me the pregnant earth,
A whimp'ling little "wee thing" bore—
A rill of modest worth.



ANTLER HALL.

But, as mountains to the river,
The river to the sea—
So the hills did filter ever,
Their waters unto me.

As years rolled by, I grew in length;
And spreading more and more,
Until at last in current strength,
I raised the Shenandoah.

From hill and dale, I onward sped
Past "Harewood's" mansion gray—
From hill and dole, I onward sped
Through fields of corn and hay.

The old mill wheel I've ceased to fill
Many a year and day;
And from the ruin on the hill
I sadly turn away.

My waters o'er the pebbles play,
In sunlight as it falls—
Or dashing o'er the lime-stone gray,
The lagging current calls.

Alas! now turbid, on I move
'Mid flags and rushes brown;
Damned by those who disapprove,
My conduct to the town."

Oh Brook, oh Brook, I greatly fear
That you are growing old:
And so discursive—year by year,
More garrulous and cold."

"Impatient Boy; fair maidens here,
Oft seek this water fall:
And summer's seasons, year by year
They sport in "Antler Hall."

When hazels grew, where century oaks
Their pliant branches swing,
I've seen beneath the wigwam's smoke,
The damask rose of spring.

Bejewel'd dames "of form divine,"
I've had beside me pass,
In stiff brocade and crinoline—
And many a buxom lass.

Some *rich-made* heirs to bluest blood,
And others passing praise,
Lashed and laced—too full in bud
For modern hooks and stays.

And I have known a score to cope,
And every art embrace;
And when the "stag of ten" was up,
Run foremost in the chase.

Yet, Hal, I vow by all above,
And all I hold most dear;
The girl you so devoutly love,
Has 'mong them not a peer.

For never since my banks were green,
Did ever creature look,
With fairer face, more graceful mien—
Reflected in a brook.

And as for Naiads of the stream,
Or Fairies of the wood,
I hold them all in high esteem;
But, they lack flesh and blood."

"Flow on oh Brook, in rhythm sweet
As ne'er was sung before;
And every home and house-hold greet,
From here to Shenandoah.

But tell me Brook, you are so clear—
In murmurs as you glide,
When last fair Constance wandered here?
And if her love abide?"

"Oh, yester noon she hurried here,
With sweet and eager eyes;
The maple leaves pursuing her
Like golden butterflies;

Tho' some sped onward in the race—
Some in her locks abide;
And some had sweeter resting place,
Than all the world beside.

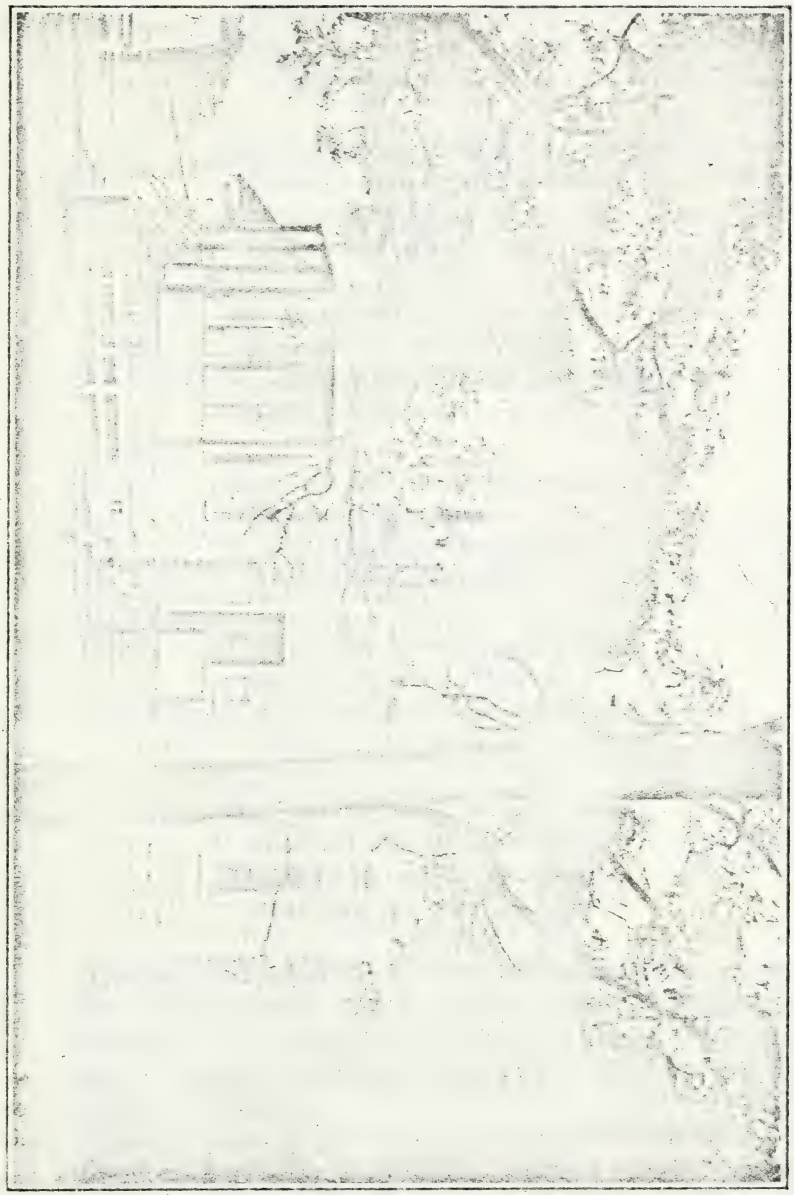
As light as air, her foot-steps spurn'd
The earth with flitting grace;
Th' flowers she touch'd, unbent and turn'd,
To look up in her face.

Yes, here she came and dalli'd long;
Some verses she seemed to croon;
And then she sang "pur Robin's" song—
His lay of "Bonnie Doon."

I wished my branches all trans-placed—
And I a strand of pearl:
That I might circle 'round her waist,
And thus embrace the girl.

She turned to where my waters float,
The autumn leaves by scores—
Until she saw the name you wrote,
Then softly murmured yours.

And then she blushed and kissed the name,
She'd intertwined with hers;
And walked away—I thought 'twas plain,
Her eyes were bright with tears.



HAREWOOD.

"Flow on oh, Brook in numbers meet,
And murmur as you glide,
A song to every home as sweet,
As here, at even-tide.

Flow on, flow on, through meadows fern'd,
Through fields or wooded dell;
With many thanks for all I've learn'd—
And all you've had to tell.

May drouth nor heat, your fountains drain—
Or drink thy "wine to lees;"
But summer clouds, bring gen'rous rain—
Your quantum to the seas.

As science and progression grow,
Develop and expand,
So may thy waters onward flow,
And beautify the land.

Flow on, flow on with gentle grace,
Beyond all times recall;
Yet, may you show your sunny face,
Always at Antler Hall.

And here oh Brook, to you I swear,
By every charm that dwells—
That only by your waters clear,
Shall ring my marriage bells."

NOTE.—Evett's Run was surveyed by Robert Brooke in 1734, and along the meanderings were located the patents for land to Lawrence Washington, the brother of the General, to Robert Worthington, the father of the first governor of Ohio, to Jost Hite, the first settler in the valley of Virginia.

Through the great oak forest, skirting this Run, marched a division of General Braddock's army in his disastrous campaign against Fort Du Quesne in 1755, and a short distance from Charles Town, his force

dug a well, which is known to this day as Braddock's well, and a mile distant from this well, on the banks of this Run, stands the picturesque ruins of St. George's chapel, built by the "Church of England" whilst Virginia was still a dependency of the crown, and on this Run, some fine old Colonial mansion houses still rest beneath the shade of primeval oaks and list the murmurs of this stream.

Caledonia, Harewood, and Antlers Hall stand in succession along its banks.

"Harewood" was built by Col. Samuel Washington about 1760, and there was married James Madison, and Louis Philip partook of its hospitality while an exile from France.

"Antlers Hall" was erected in 1780 by Dr. John Briscoe or Briskaugh. He was a native of St. Mary's county, Maryland; his ancestors came from England with the first settlers of that colony in 1633 or 1634.

"Evett's Run" was named after an early explorer of the stream and one who lived near its source.

"Caledonia," now the residence of the Aldridge family stands high above the fountain head of this stream. The ivy clothed walls of this old and hospitable mansion were built by Gerard Briscoe or his son, J. Henderson Briscoe, about the year 1800. The stream winds through the lovely vale for eight or ten miles, and empties into the Shenandoah some miles below Charles Town, the county seat of Jefferson county.

The early history of the "Old Church" or "St. George's Chapel" of Norborne Parish, so far as we know, is clothed in mystery. It is supposed, with good ground for the supposition, to have been built between 1760 and 1770, but there appears to be no record of the exact date or by whom it was built. We do know, however, that Norborne Parish was established at the time of the above dates.

There have been many stories and legends written both in prose and verse in connection with this old church, but this is the only one that as far as I know, has any authentic source. Many, many years ago, a relation of the writer, was commissioned to carry back from Maryland a certain silver mug, engraved with the family crest and deliver it to the owner of Antler Hall, he being the rightful owner of the mug. The commission was accepted by Mr. B. and all went well until he stopped at Cherry's Tavern, a few miles distant from the old chapel, where it was supposed he had stopped to have his horse fed and refresh

himself. But alas, having "crooked his elbow once too often, he mounted his steed and disappeared into the gloom of the night. The

ST. GEORGE'S CHAPEL.

next morning he was found fast asleep on the floor of the old church, but the mug entrusted to his care was gone, and not for twenty years after was it found beneath the floor of the old building, and it is still in the possession of the writer's family.

W. D. BRISCOE.

Charles Town, West Virginia.

THE SIGNIFICANCE OF SCOTCH-IRISH HISTORY.

The writer of this article cheerfully testifies, that much of the interesting historical reading recently enjoyed by him, has been afforded by the West Virginia Historical Magazine; By such reading he has been impressed by two sentiments. One finds expression in the phrase

to this effect, a traveler may go so far east, as to wind up in the west. The other is suggested by Charles McKay's beautiful "Little but Great." In this poem, the gifted poet, speaks of a little spring losing its way amid grapes and ferns when a passing stranger scooped a well, whereat weary, thirsty man might be refreshed. Another little thing was the random thought, uttered by a dreamer. Though it was old, yet it was new and strong in virtue of being true. Again, a nameless man while moving with the crowd thronging the daily mart, unstudied from his heart, let fall a word of hope and love.

"O germ! O fount! O word of love
O thought at random cast
Ye were but little at the first
But mighty at the last."

George Bancroft, the father of U. S. History, makes this remark about the Scotch-Irish: "We shall find the *first voice* publicly raised in America to dissolve all connection with Great Blitain came not from the Puritans of New England, or the Dutch of New York, or the Planters of Virginia, but from the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians."—Vol. 5, p. 77.

By common sonsent, it is conceded, that the apparent inspiration that impelled them to utter this "first voice" is traceable to Samuel Davis and John Craig.

Gen. Braddock's defeat occurred July 9th, 1775. There are no words that can fully describe the gloomy consternation, that prevailed among the Scotch-Irish pioneers.

In Hanover county, Rev. Samuel Davis preached July 19th or 20th, from Isaiah 22:12-14. In that sermon he says, "What is that religion good for that leaves men cowards on the approach of danger? And permit me to say, that I am particularly solicitous that you my brethren of the Dissenters, should act with honor and spirit in this juncture, as it becomes loyal subjects, lovers of your country, and courageous Christians. It is certain that many will be great sufferers by the drought, and many lives will be lost in our various expeditions. Our poor brethren in Augusta and other frontier counties are slaughtered and scalped."

As to the condition of affairs about Staunton, Va., Rev. John Craig,

in his narrative says: "When Gen. Braddock was defeated and killed, our country was laid open to the enemy, our people were in dreadful confusion, and discouraged to the highest degree. Some of the richer sort that could take money with them, to live upon were for flying to some safer part of the country. My advice was then called for, which I gave, opposing that scheme as a scandal to our nation, falling below our brave ancestors, making ourselves a reproach among Virginians, a dishonour to our friends at home, an evidence of cowardice, want of faith, and a noble Christian dependence on God, as able to save and deliver from the heathen; it would be a lasting blot to our posterity."

Mr. Craig then strenuously urged the building of forts, one of which was to be used for church purposes, as well as for defence, and he has left this record to the effect: "The people required me to go before them in the work, which I did cheerfully though it cost me one-third of my estate. The people readily followed, and my congregation in less than two months was well fortified."—Foote's sketches, page 32.

Subsequently to 1773, Rev. Charles Cummins exerted such an influence that it is believed indeed to have been largely due to his influence, public meetings in the Virginia Valley adopted resolutions tending to a separation from England, several months previously to the famous Mecklinburg declaration. This liberty-loving trait that prompted the Scotch-Irish to be the first to "raise a voice" for dissolving all connection with Great Britain, is usually ascribed to a distinctive doctrinal belief technically termed Calvinistic.

The writer of this article, however, is rather inclined to the opinion that the vital germ of this aptitude for personal individual liberty is to be looked for in *racial origin* and *characteristics*.

The man of Beor, whilst beholding and confronting the forbears of this race, from his position by the smoking altars, on the rugged uplands of Moab, exclaimed in prophetic frenzy with his reluctant lips. "lo *the people* shall dwell alone, and not be reckoned among the nations." The origin of "*the people* not to be reckoned among the nations", as the seed of Isaac, was distinct and peculiar from all others before or since, in its having been tantamount to a *resurrection* from among the dead, and *involved* the *heirship* of *the earth*.

"The heaven, even the heavens are the Lord's, but the *earth* has He given to the children of men."

While such an origin sternly prohibits affiliation or identification with other nations, it does not exclude individuals or other peoples from identifying themselves with the sons of Isaac. Isaac's sons, or as abbreviated Saxons. For some reason or other, the importance due such *unique origin,* has not been to any marked extent as yet given to the race in question, promised the heirship of the world. An origin tantamount to arising from the dead, and involving the heirship of the earth, has not been sufficiently considered by the generality of students in human affairs who seem to monopolize the attention of the vast majority of *now* living and thinking men. To a large extent the descendants of the Scotch-Irish in the trans-Alleghany sections of West Virginia are affiliated with the various branches of Methodists, the Baptist and the Presbyterian denominations. This article will be mainly devoted in noting the rise and early development of the Scotch-Irish element affiliated with the Presbyterian church, leaving it to others with the hope they may perform a similar service for their respective denominations, sooner or later. Previous to the year 1783, there were no organized Presbyterian churches west of the Alleghanies. In that year Rev. John McCue, organized the Lewisburg church, and was the first pastor.

About that time two church buildings were erected; one at Falling Spring, the other near Lewisburg.

So far as can be ascertained the Lewisburg church was the first Protstant organization in what is now West Virginia, and the two houses of worship the first to be erected by any denomination not only in West Virginia, but in much of the largest portion of the great western valleys. Rev. John McCue organized the church of Spring Creek, upper Greenbrier county about 1804, and the church of Union, Monroe county, the same year, comprising the Presbyterians of Monroe county, and is the mother church of Monroe, as Lewisburg and Spring Creek, are the mother churches of Greenbrier and lower Pocahontas.

The Oak Grove church, in the Little Levels of Pocahontas county, was organized in 1793 by Rev. Wm. Hill, and is the mother church of Pocahontas county.

Liberty, in upper Pocahontas was organized by Revs. Wm. Wilson and Benjamin Evin, in 1804. Mr. Wilson was at the time pastor of the old stone church, near Fort Defiance, and Mr. Ervin, pastor of Mossy creek, Augusta county.

Muddy creek church, in West Greenbrier, was organized by Rev. Dr. John McElhenny in 1816.

Anthony's creek church, East Greenbrier, was organized by Dr. McElhenny in 1817.

First church of Charleston organized under the ministry of Rev Dr. Henry Ruffner, about 1818, is the mother church of the Great Kanawha Valley. Subsequently, Rev. James M. Brown, D. D., accomplished much.

Tygart's Valley church, the mother church of Randolph county, West Virginia, was organized by Rev. Aretas Loomis, March 1st, 1820, as a Congregationalist church, but it became connected with Lexington Presbytery in 1822.

Parkersburg church was organized February, 1833. The early history of this church, reads like a romance, and points an interesting moral. It traces its organized existence to the labors of Rev. James McAboy, a Baptist Scotch-Irish preacher, who settled at Parkersburg about the year 1821, mainly for the purpose of establishing a school.

Carmel church, in Monroe county, was detached from Union church, and organized in 1835, under the ministry of Rev. Wm. G. Campbell.

Point Pleasant owes its organized existence to the services of Rev. S. Gould, pastor of Gallipolis church, Ohio. He preached here from 1815, to 1825; then after that, there was no regular services for nine years. In 1834, Rev. Francis Dutton, came as a home missionary, and was so acceptable to the Scotch-Irish, that a church was organized in 1834.

Summersville church was organized in 1839 by Rev. Dr. McElhenney, and is the pioneer Presbyterian church of Nicholas county.

The foregoing is an attempt to outline the pioneer history of the churches that were planted by the Scotch-Irish, in West Virginia, and with which the pious element of theScotch-Irish were usually identified. The Scotch-Irish population has outstripped the effective capacity of the Presbyterian ministry to follow them up, and gather them into the fold, of their ancestry, and so it has come about there are entire counties in West Virginia without a Presbyterian pastor.

In the same counties and other counties too, are devoted Methodists, Baptists and Episcopalians, with simon pure Scotch-Irish blood in their veins, whose families are the hope and strong support of their respective churches.

The discerning reader of Scotch-Irish history, will perceive that much of it is a rehearsal of the troubles these people suffered on account of their religion.

As a rule in European nations, some particular church was established by legal enactment, hence non-conformity was branded as disloyal and punishable, and some good men believed they would be doing God service by efforts to exterminate all such as followed not with them. Too often was it the case, that the persecuted became persecutors, when the scales of power balanced in their favor.

Just here, however, let the conception be agreed upon that no church of the present time, should be held responsible for the errors and wrongs of a former age, except in so far, as they may apologize or condone for the errors in question, or endorse and propagate them. Early in the reign of James I, a number of the leading landed proprietors in Ulster, conspired to dethrone the King, and the result was that Lord Tyrone, Tyreonnell and others fled the country, and their possessions became the property of the Crown, aggregating a half million of acres. Ulster is the most northern province of Ireland and composed of nine counties: Antrim, Armagh, Cavan, Donegal, Down, Fermanagh, Londonderry, Monaghan, and Tyrone. As rewards for services rendered or expected, this half million acres were parceled out to the English and Scotch favorites of King James.

At the time the conspiracy referred to, occurred, outside of fortified towns, there was scarcely any civilization apparent, many of the country people had gone to the woods, where they lived almost in a state of nature. The condition of farm operations among the natives may be judged by the fact, that they hitched their plow horses by the tails to the rude plows, that were in use.

We are not surprised to hear, that when the crown lands, came to be distributed, that such poor farmers, as the natives appeared to be, received but little consideration and had what was given them, laid off in the more rugged and barren districts. Only forty native Irish in the large county of Donegal received small shares in a dreary region, and forty-five in the county of Fermanagh.

For a time the Highlanders made things very lively and unsettled by the presence of an element, "who for debt, and breaking and fleeing from justice, or seeking shelter from charges of manslaughter in their clan fights, came hither hoping to be without fear of man's justice, in

a land where there was nothing or little as yet of the fear of God. The comparatively few Highlanders that may have remained permanently, after all this coming and going, may account for the numerous *Macs* that make up such a prominent portion of the Scotch-Irish citizenship. From 1609, and on things changed for the better very much, in that a poor but a more steady class of people were brought over from the low lands of Scotland by the new proprietors. King James, moreover, interested the corporation of London in the occupancy of the Crown lands in Ulster, the advertised object being to reduce "the savage and rebellious people to civility, peace, religion and obedience." And so the whole county of Coleraine was granted the Londoners, who changed the county name, to Londonderry and founded the town of Derry.

It is interesting to notice that the names of many of the Scotch and English setlers incidentally mentioned in annals of that period are identical with the names of so many people in the Valley of Virginia, and throughout West Virginia.

The Historian, Froude, has this to say about the Scotch settlers in Ulster, "They went over to earn a living by labor, in a land which had produced hitherto little but banditti. They built towers and villages, they established trades and manufactures, they enclosed fields, raised farm houses and homesteads where til then there had been but robbers' castles, wattled huts, or holes in the earth like rabbit-burrows. While without artificial distinctions, they were saved from degenerating into the native type by their religion then growing in its first enthusiasm into a living power which pervaded their entire being.

Should any courteous reader wish to pursue this intensely interesting subject, to satisfactory results, let such be referred to the Hon. J. Addison Waddell's "Annals of Augusta County." Let this article be closed by some comments recently published in the Washington Post. The theme of these comments is the Scotch-Irish, a people of whom all West Virginians should be proud, for there are so many of them, whose veins run full of Scotch-Irish blood.

When our readers peruse these comments, they will see and appreciate the pertinency of Mr. McKay's poem to Scotch-Irish origin and achievements.

And now for the comments, "It is a hardy race,—that Scotch-Irish. It defended Londonderry, it drove the Stuarts from the British Isles; it

believed in prayer, and it believed in work. It had faith and it could fight. It came to these shores, and we find it in New Hampshire; in Pennsylvania, in Virginia, and in the Carolinas. It was at Cape Breton, and at Quebec. It was in the Continental Congress, and in the Continental army. It was in the infant navy and in the adult navy. It sailed with Preble and fought with Decatur. It was with Farragut at Mobile and roved with Semines on strange seas. It gained the victory at King's Mountain and saw the surrender at Yorktown. It helped to make the Constitution and did more than its share in winning the west. George Rogers Clarke was of its blood, and the victor of New Orleans was one of its heroes. It was with Stonewall Jackson at Chancellorsville, and with George H. Thomas at Chickamaugua. It triumphed with Grant and surrendered with Lee. It believes in the family and in the home, in the church and in the school, and when it has girded on the sword it has put the Bible in the knapsack. It is a Presbyterian and representaeive government, in church and in state is part of its religion. It is for the Sabbath that God ordaied. It is mighty nearly the elected crown of American citizenship. Yet vaunteth not itself."

W. T. PRICE.

Marlinton, W. Va., August 10, 1903.

THE HOUSTONS OF MONONGALIA.

"OUR PIONEERS, WHENCE CAME THEY?"

The above is the title of an article published in the Trans-Allegheny Historical Magazine a few months ago. In reply to that query I submit a few items that may be of interest to some of your readers.

On page 488 of Wiley's History of Monongalia county, West Virginia, is a list of the names of Revolutionary officers and soldiers living in Monogalia in 1832, and, it is stated, "showing the nativity of those born outside of the State of Virginia." In the list is the name of Parnell Houston, but as there is no foot-note "showing his nativity" the impression it gives is that he was born in Virginia.

On page 348, it is stated that Waitman Willey Houston was born

May 9, 1858, and that "his father, William H. Houston, was a son of William Houston who married Abbie Baker and came from *New Jersey* to this country." This is incorrect. William Houston was born in the State of Delaware about 1782, moved to Virginia with his father when a small boy, and was married in Monongalia county.

Instead of being a native of Virginia, as above indicated, Purnell Houston was born in Somerset county, Maryland, on February 1, 1755, where his parents then resided. He was the second child and only son of Robert H. Houston and Mary (Purnell) Houston. Not long after his birth his mother died and his father moved to Sussex county, Delaware, where he married Miss Priscilla Laws, about 1757. The fruit of this marriage was thirteen children, one of them, John A. L. Houston, the father of the late Judge John Wallace Houston, who was a member of the 30th and 31st Congresses and for many years thereafter one of the Judges of the Supreme Court of the State of Delaware.

Purnell Houston was a great-grandson of Robert R. Houston the immigrant, who came to this country from Scotland in the year 1664, and died in December, 1693.

Purnell Houston was married, probably in Sussex county, Delaware. His name appears in the list of taxables for that county in the year 1787. He moved to Monongalia county, Virginia, in 1790. In the latter part of 1832 he made application for a pension as a Revolutionary soldier. He was then living near Prentiss, Monongalia county. In his application he declared:

"I served two months in the militia of Delaware but do not know when. The companies were authorized to be raised to guard the Delaware bay. I volunteered in one of the companies commanded by Capt. John Hazzard. About Nov. 1, 1776, I volunteered in Philadelphia in a company of Pennsylvania militia commanded by Captain Chambers, which was attached to Gen. Cadwalader's brigade. These troops were raised to guard against the enemy who were running over New Jersey. In the latter part of November or first of December we moved to and were encamped near Trenton, the enemy being in possession of Trenton. On Christmas we crossed over to Trenton when the American troops captured 900 Hessians. The next day we marched eight or ten miles into New Jersey and encamped at a place called Blackbird where we remained until the first week in January, 1777, when we marched back to Trenton. We were discharged in Market street, Philadelphia,

after being in service five months. In April, 1777, I went out in Col. Bland's regiment of Virginia light horse to serve two months. I was immediately sent to Morristown where I was employed in repairing saddles for the troopers. At the end of two months I was discharged by Col. Bland. In July, 1777, I went from Philadelphia to Egg Harbor and boarded a *brig going round to Boston. Near Cape Cod we were captured by a British vessel, taken to Rhode Island and put on board a prison ship where we were kept eight or nine months when we were discharged. After the Revolution I resided in Kent and Sussex counties, Delaware, until I removed to the county of Monongalia, Virginia, aforesaid, forty-two years ago. The record of my age is taken from my father's Bible, in the possession of my sister Carlile in said Sussex county."

Witnesses.
Rev. John Shackleford.
John Evans.

Application sworn to before Thos. P. Ray, Clerk.

The inscription on his tombstone states that he was born February 1, 1755, and died March 9, 1835. His wife, Mary Houston, died January 31, 1830.

THEIR CHILDREN WERE:

1. Susanna Houston, born, ————: married Wm. Hollefeld, Monongalia county, 1809.
2. James Houston, born, 1780; moved to Indiana.
3. William Houston, born, 1782; married Abigail Baker, near Morgantown, Va.
4. Purnell Houston, born, 1794; married Sarah McVicker, near Morgantown, Va.
5. Sarah Houston, born, 17—; married Joseph Hill, near Morgantown, Va.
6. Robert Houston, born, ——; married to Susanna Bear, near Morgantown, Va.
7. Elizabeth Houston, born, ——; married John Saunders, near Morgantown, Va.
8. Rhoda Houston, born, ——; married William Hill, near Morgantown, Va.

The original ancestor of the Houston family was Sir Hugh de Padvinan, a Frenchman who went to Scotland about 1160. He obtained a grant of land of the Barony of Kilpeter and erected his castle on it. In the course of time a number of houses were built around the castle, and the place was called Hugh's Town. Afterwards it was called Houstoun and the family was known as Houstoun of Houstoun.

R. R. SWEET.

Washington, D. C., Aug. 17, 1903.

---

*Privateer.

BENJAMIN HOUSTON—LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT.

In the name of God, Amen. The tenth day of December Anno. One thousand seven hundred & thirty-three I Benjamin Houston of Somerset county in the province of Maryland, planter, being sick and weak in body yett sound and perfect in witt and memory doe make and order this my last will and testament, first of all I do give and bequeath my precious and immortal soul into the hands of my ever blessed and Merciful Saviour and Redeemer Jesus Christ in and through whose merits and mediation alone I expect eternal Redemption from and pardon of my sins. 2d. I give and Recommend my body to the earth to be decently and orderly buried therein nothing doughting but at the general Resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God and as touching such worldly estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life I give and dispose of as followeth:

Imprimus—I give and bequeath to my daughter Mary Houston one feather bed and furniture and curtens and vallens and the chest of drawers and the avel table,—

Impurvis—I give and bequeath to my son Benjamin Houston the next best feather bed and furnetune and one large chest and one gun and one carven knife and steal and all the peuter and the rest of my goods to be divided between my two children that is to say Mary Houston and Benjamin Houston also I sett free my negro Dick and give him my mare bridle and saddle and for him to be free ninety-nine years—

Item I give and bequeath to my son in law Benjamin Warrenton the old gun of all—

Item I give and bequeath to Joshua Sturgis my two children my Mary and Benjamin till they come to the years of Custom Country—

My will and desire is and do apint my well beloved brother Joseph Houston whole and sole Executor of this my last will and testament made by me the subscriber the date above Ritten As witness my hand and seal.

BENJA HOUSTON. (S)

Signed sealed in the presence of us
JOSHUA STURGIS.
ALLEN GRAY.
Probated March 20, 1734.

JOHN JONES.

In the Clifton Cemetery, just above the mouth of Paint Creek, on the Kanawha river, there will be found a modest marble monument, on which is engraved

"In memory of John Jones, who departed this life
"January 7th, 1838, aged 83 years.
"He was a member of the Baptist Church 42 years."

He was born in 1755, and came from Culpepper Co. and came first in 1774 with General Andrew Lewis' army and he was in the battle of Point Pleasant. He returned to Culpepper, and was engaged in the Revolutionary struggle until it was completed. Some say of him that he was wounded at Point Pleasant, some that it was while in the revolutionary army, and some say that he was not wounded at all, and if so, it must have been a slight wound as he seems never to have complained of it.

He was among the first settlers of the Kanawha Valley, and he located just above the mouth of Paint Creek and there he remained the rest of his life. He obtained patents for land, in 1792, for 359 acres on the Kanawha river, and also for 430 the same year, in 1797 for 400 acres in Teays Valley, and also for land on Paint Creek, and made purchases besides those from the State. He controlled the situation from Paint Creek to the narrows, and the town of Clifton, afterwards called Dego, and now Pratt, was located on his land, and his homestead was there also.

He married Frances Morris, a sister of William and Leonard Morris, but the year of his marriage we have not been able to secure.

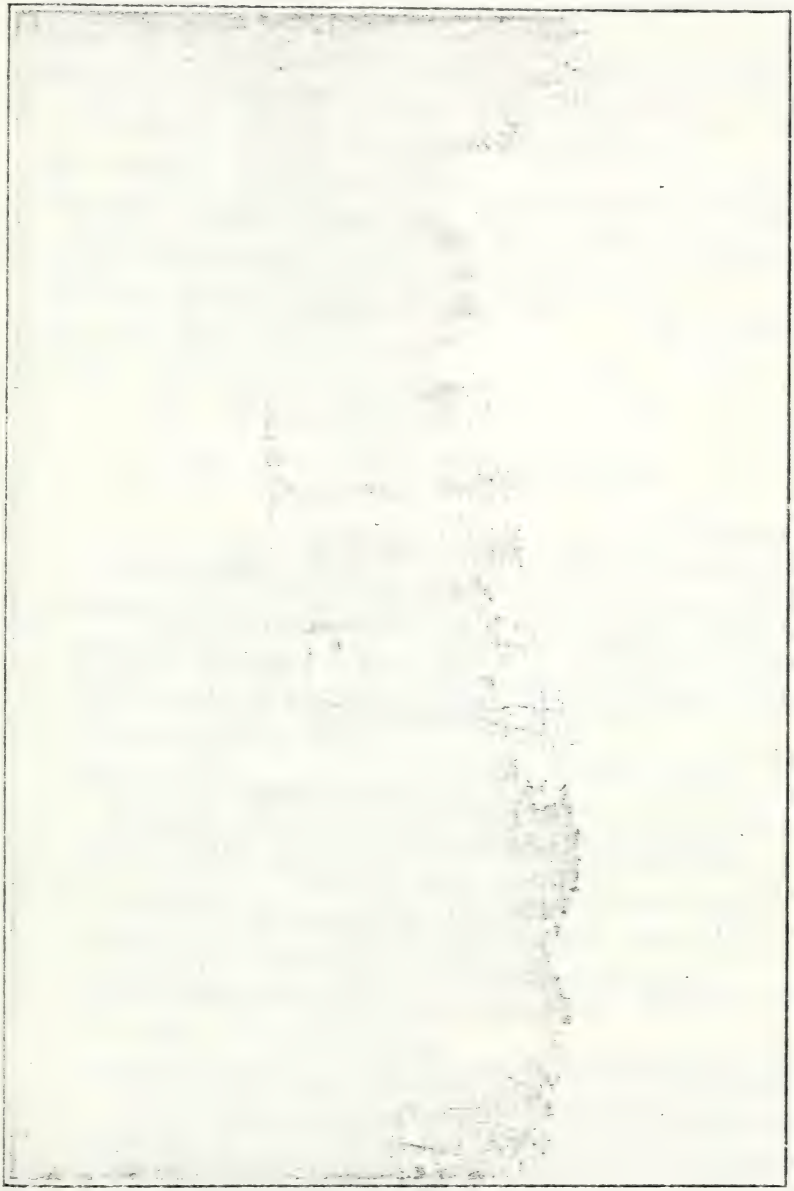
His home and farm was a comfortble one, although it was made when his rifle was necessary as was his axe or his mattock, and his home was a comfortable place for the weary traveler to be refreshed and rested, when such places were scarce.

He was a very positive and decided man in his words and ways and entertained his own peculiar views of things. All through his life, he had and used an over-coat, made after the old soldier style of gray jeans, with fringed cape, &c. From 1796, he was a member of the Baptist Church, which was the first one in the Valley, and the church was erected at the mouth of Kelley's creek, built by the Morris family relatives and friends in the year 1796.

There was a circumstance in the soldier life of Mr. Jones that has come down by tradition, which circumstance must have been related by him, and the character of the incident and of the fact that he was a good Baptist brother is sufficient guaranty of its correctness.

He said that he could not rest, nor sleep without fully undressing himself, and while at Point Pleasant he had made for himself as comfortable a soldier bed as could well then and there be made, of weeds and leaves, and was on the night of October the 9th, sleeping quietly and profoundly, and that suddenly, in the morning of the 10th, he was awakened by the firing of guns and the rush and call to arms, when he jumped to secure his gun and ammunition and left his camp so hurriedly that he forgot to fully dress himself and went into battle without having on his pantaloons, and without them continued in the battle field the entire day. It is also said that he was near his officer, Capt. John Field, when he received his death wound.

We do not suppose that Mr. Jones had any particular advantage over his Indian friends, but rather that the white soldiers and Indians had the advantage of him in the way of parade dress. He did not prepare to die in the breeches, but went to the field, with his Captain Field, and lived to tell the naked truth of the unpleasant affair at Point Pleasant. By his will, which was recorded in the Kanawha county court in March, 1838, we learn that he left his wife, Frances, all his personal estate, &c., and he mentions his children, viz.: Gabriel, who returned to Culpepper Co.; William; Nancy, who married Huddleston, Thomas, Levi, Frances, who married Shelton, and was the



mother of Hon. Winston Shelton, late of Nicholas Co; Edward, John, Hillary, Benjamin, and Cynthia, who first married Mr. Funk, and afterwards married Jabez Spinks.

Many of his sons removed to Wayne county, Ind., of whom were John, Edmond, William and Levi. Thomas remained at home and never married. Hillary lived and died in Fayette county. Benjamin removed to Texas and there died.

Whether our hero of Point Pleasant was akin to the celebrated valley lawyer, Gabriel Jones, we know not, but he named his son for him either on account of a family tie, or through respect for the great lawyer. And this is all we know of John Jones.

W. S. LAIDLEY.

SHEPHERD FAMILY ITEMS.

In the October number, 1902, of your magazine is a very interesting illustrated sketch of Thomas Shepherd, of Shepherdstown, from the pen of Mrs. Fanny Shepherd Allen. It is not the purpose of this note to add to that sketch a line of facts, now in hand, touching him and some members of his family and their descendants, but to correct two of the statements, which inaccurate traditions carried into Mrs. Allen's work.

Susannah Shepherd, born September 1, 1758; married John Eoff, born February 14, 1752, at Shepherdstown, on the 27th day of March, 1777. They crossed the mountains prior to 1800 and settled on land six miles east of Wheeling; later on, that land was sold and a farm purchased on the bank of the Ohio, which embraced ground on which the southern portion of that city now stands. John Eoff, the husband of Susannah, was a farmer all his life and not, at any time, a member of either of the so-called learned professions. He died on his homestead February 13 or 14, 1831.

His son, Dr. John Eoff, born Oct. 2, 1788, who also died there in January, 1859, was the most distinguished physician of that city during days of his active practice from which he retired in 1840. The father and son have often been confused from the sameness of the name and the long overlapping of their lives in the same city. I have

pleasure of a personal acquaintance with a son of Dr. Eoff, born March 26, 1828, resident of Wheeling sixty years, now resident of this city, totally blind for the past seventeen years, a very intelligent, active-minded, well preserved, interesting gentleman, Alexander Quarrier Eoff.

He says that in the great flood of 1832 all his father's papers, including those pertaining to the family, were destroyed by the water rising into the residence to the depth of five feet. "When it subsided the old tall clock was lying on its face on the floor. No one had ever dreamed that the waters of the river could rise into the house."

"Martha married a Mr. McDowell."

The writer's grandmother, Mrs. Col. Joseph Holmes, was a daughter of George McNabb and Martha Shepherd McNabb. These great grand parents were married at Shepherdstown-Mecklenburg, in 1771. In the passage of the traditions the McNabb has doubtless been metamorphosed into "McDowell."

J. T. HOLMES.

Columbus, O., May 15, 1903.

Since the foregoing items were written the April number has come to hand. The article therein on Col. David Shepherd states that the Col. had three sisters and one brother. He had four brothers: William, Thomas, John and Abraham, and five sisters: Martha, Mary, Susannah, Sarah and Elizabeth. Sarah married a Mr. Thornburg and Elizabeth married William Brown.

Very truly yours,

J. T. HOLMES.

PIONEER SETTLEMENT OF WEST VIRGINIA.

Dr. John P. Hale wrote that the discovery, exploration, conquest, settlement and civilization of a continent, once done in this age, is done forever; that pioneer history does not repeat itself; that the history of those who braved the dangers, endured the privations and hardships of pioneer life and participated in the stirring events that attended the transformation of the wilderness into homes of comfort and lux-

ury, can never be repeated; that the conditions can never exist again.

It is well to teach the younger generation and to have our own minds refreshed with the facts that made up this pioneer life: to know with what our ancestors were satisfied to endure, in order that they might have lived and left this land to us.

It is our present purpose to give some facts in relation to the settlement of West Virginia's present territory, which began on the Shenandoah and Potomac rivers, in the Valley of Virginia in 1732.

Virginia was then an English colony, its seat of government at Williamsburg. The King of England appointed the Governor and the Govrenor had his privy council, and those with the House of Burgesses, constituted the Assembly of the Colony. The only constitution they had was the pleasure of the King: if the Acts of the Assembly did not suit his Majesty, they were abrogated by his veto. If they did suit him, there was no limit to their authority and power. When the Assembly was not in session, the Governor and Council controlled matters, made grants of land, and whatever there was to do, to carry on the government to suit his majesty.

Governors of the Colony of Virginia.

We give the names and dates of the governors and their terms of office, for a better comprehension of the times and events, beginning with

Alexander Spottswood.....1710 to 1722
Hugh Drysdale.....1722 to 1726
Robt. Carter, President of Council.....1726 to 1727
William Gooch.....1727 to 1749-52
Robt. Dinwiddie.....1749-52 to 1758

The time when Gooch ceased and Dinwiddie began is not known.

Francis Fauquier.....1758 to 1767
John Blair.....1767 to 1768
Lord Botetourt.....1769 to 1770
William Nelson, President, &c.....1770 to1772
Lord Dunmore.....1772 to 1775

And this was the last of Colonial Governors in Virginia.

The settlements in the present territory of West Virginia from 1732 continued to grow and extend to the country included within Jeffer-

son, Berkeley, Morgan, Hampshire and Hardy, but did not extend beyond the Alleghenies for some years afterwards. The country on the west side of these mountains were spoken of as "lands on the waters of the Mississippi," and were an unknown quantity.

French and Indian War.

The French and England were always at war, and now there was a contest for territory. The French were located on the northern lakes, and at New Orleans and it was their desire and purpose to explore and discover and claim all the land west of the Allegheny.

Both France and England were pushing their claims to the country of the Ohio Valley.

In 1749 the French was engaged in taking possession by planting leaden plates bearing inscriptions asserting her claims to the lands, and planted the first plate on the Alleghany river at the mouth of the Conewago on the 15th day of June, 1749. The second plate was on the 3rd day of August, buried at the mouth of French Creek; the third at Wheeling, on the 13th day of August; the fourth at Marietta, and the fifth at Point Pleasant, on the 18th of August, 1749. Besides these buried plates, it is asserted that large surveys of lands were made by the French, taking Piont Pleasant as a head-centre, lines were run and marked, corners established, trees marked, &c. These lines have been found extending from the Ohio river, across to Elk river, on to Gauley; and also from Kanawha river into Teays' Valley. These marked trees indicate work done previous to the time that any Virginia surveyor was ever here.

The King of England, Geo. II, in March, 1749, instructed the Governor of Virginia to grant to a corporation designated as "The Ohio Land Company" four hundred thousand acres of land between the Monongahela and the Great Kanawha." Among the members of this land company there were Lawrence A. Washington, Geo. Mason, Jas. Mercer, Robt. Dinwiddie and Thomas Cresap, and the company were to colonize one hundred families on said land within seven years, to survey two-fifths of the land and build and garrison a fort. They sent an explorer to view the land, Christopher Gist, in 1750, and it is said he went to the mouth of the Great Kanawha and also to the Falls of the Ohio.

On the 12th day of June, 1749, the governor granted to a numerous company of adventurers, leave to take up and survey eight hundred thousand acres of land, beginning on the North Carolina line and running westward and northward for quantity, and they were to have four years to survey and purchase rights for the same. They proceeded to survey and to sell land at the rate of three pounds for the one hundred acres, or about fifteen cents per acre, and the purchasers to settle on the lands. They were afterwards granted four years more in which to complete their surveys. This company was called "The Loyal Company."

On the 29th of October, 1751, there was granted to the Greenbrier Company leave to take up one hundred thousand acres of land lying on the Greenbrier river, northwest and west of the Cowpasture river, and four years were allowed in which to survey.

These measures were hastened for the purpose, on the part of the King, to get possession in advance of the French, and on the part of the companies, to get control of the land. They were called adventurers, by which it was meant, speculators.

Then the French began to build Forts, and this meant business. Governor Dinwiddie, of Virginia, sent Washington and others to the French officers, who courteously infomed him that he meant to hold the Ohio Valley.

This meant war.

The Governor of Virginia then wanted soldiers and this is the way he obtained them.

"Proclamation of 1754."

"A Proclamation for encouraging men to enlist in his Majesty's "service for the defence and security of this colony."

"Whereas, it is determined that a fort be immediately built on the "river Ohio at the fork of Monongahela to oppose any further encour- "agements or hostile attempts of the French and Indians in their "interest, and for the security and protection of his Majesty's subjects "in this colony, and as it is absolutely necessary that a sufficient force "should be raised to erect and support the same, for an encourage- "ment to all who shall voluntarily enter into said service, I do hereby "notify and promise, by and with the advice and consent of his Maj-

"esty's Council of this Colony, that over and above their pay, two hun-
"dred thousand acres of his Majesty's, the King of Great Britain,
"lands, on the east side of the river Ohio, within this dominion, (one
"hundred thousand acres whereof to be contiguous to the said fort and
"the other hundred thousand acres to be on or near the river Ohio)
"shall be laid off and granted to such persons who by their voluntary
"engagement and good behavior in the said service shall deserve the
"same. And I further promise that the said land shall be divided
"amongst them immediately after the performance of the said ser-
"vice in a proportion due to their respective merit as shall be repre-
"sented to me by their officers and held and enjoyed by them without
"paying any rights and also free from the payment of quit rents, for
"the term of fifteen years, and I do appoint this proclamation to be
"read and published at the Court Houses, churches and chapels, in each
"county within this colony and that the sheriff take care the same be
"done accordingly.

"Given at the Council Chamber in Williamsburg on the 19th day
"of February, in the 27th year of his Majesty's reign. Anno Domini.
"1754."

"ROBERT DINWIDDIE."

"God save the King."

What with the determination of the French to hold the Ohio Valley, and the desperation expressed in the above proclamation to prevent the French and to hold it themselves, and the Land Companies that were formed, it would seem that the country on the waters of the Mississippi would have been settled immediately by the emigrants that were flocking to America from the old world.

But actual war now began between the French assisted by the Indians, and the English, assisted by the Virginians, and other colonists.

The defeat of General Braddock in July, 1755, left the Ohio Valley in control of the French.

This war put an end to the settlement of the country through the agency of the Land Companies, and it called for all the spare men that could be had.

The result was that the Indians began their war on the whites on the frontier and destroyed all unprotected families and settlements wherever found, and the conctruction of the fort at Winchester became an absolutte necessity and a hurried one also.

The settlements that were subject to the Indian incursions at this time, were on the South Branch of the Potomac and on the Greenbrier and on the Potomac and upper New River.

In 1757 the Roanoke settlement was destroyed by the Indians. The Greenbrier settlement was destroyed and remained deserted until 1769.

In 1755 the Indians drove the Hogeland family to the Fort near Romney and in 1756 the Indians attacked settlers close to Winchester and Nealy's Fort was attacked on the Opequon, and there was the battle of the "Trough" on the South Branch. Fort London was required to be built to protect Winchester and the people in that vicinity.

In 1757 the Indians kept up their raids and the records of Frederick County was required to be placed in the Fort.

In 1758 Washington was sent to the Ohio, at Fort Capon, Bowers and York families were attacked, and Fort Siebort, now in Pendleton was attacked.

The French found they could not hold Fort Du Quesne and they blew it up and withdrew therefrom and the English took immediate possession and rebuilt the Fort and called it Fort Pitt.

When the French withdrew, their Indian allies removed west into Ohio, fearing to remain near the Fort.

This left the north west part of Virginia almost free to the settlers, yet there were occasional hunters and a few warriors seeking to wreak their vengeance on the unprotected whites.

The French and English made a treaty of peace and then follows the Royal Proclamation of 1763 by King George, and as this bears particularly upon settlers we must call attention to his Majesty's directions.

"Proclamation of 1763."

"George R:

"Whereas, we have taken into our royal consideration the exten-
"sion and valuable acquisitions in America, secured to our crown by
"the late definitive treaty of peace, conducted at Paris the tenth of
"February last, and being desirous that all our loving subjects as well
"of our Kingdom as our colonies in America, may avail themselves

"with all convenient speed, of the great benefits and advantages which "may accrue thererom to their commerce, manufactories and naviga- "tion, we have thought fit, with the advice of our privy council to "issue this our royal proclamation, hereby to publish and to declare "to all our loving subjects, that we have, with the advice of our said "privy council granted our letters patent under our great seal of "Great Britain to erect within the countries and islands ceded and "confirmed to us by the said treaty, from distant and separate govern- "ments, styled and called by the name of Quebec, East Florida, West "Florida, and Grenada, &c., &c"

He then proceeds to give the boundaries of his four new governments and desires his "loving subjects" therein to form governments, legislatures and courts, &c., and for the Governor to grant lands, &c.

He then directs the governors in his colonies to grant without fee or reward to such reduced officers as have served in North America during the late war and to such private soldiers as have been or shall be disbanded in America and are actually deserving these and shall personally apply for the same, the following quantities of lands, subject, after the expiration of ten years, to the same quit rents as other lands are subject to, in the province within which they are granted as also subject to the same conditions of cultivation and improvement, viz.: To every one having the rank of field officer, 6000 acres. To every captain 3000 acres. To every subaltern officer two thousand acres. to every non-commissioned officer 200 acres, and to every private, fifty acres.

And a like bounty to the officers of the Navy.

He then directs that no governor or commander in chief, in any of the colonies or plantations in America, do presume for the present and until our future pleasure be known, to grant warrants of survey, or pass patents for any lands, beyond the heads or the sources of any of the rivers which fall into the Atlantic ocean from the west or upon any land whatever which not having been ceded to or purchased by us, or reserved to the Indians.

And we do further strictly enjoin and require all persons whatsoever who have wilfully or inadvertantly seated themselves upon any lands within the countries above described or upon any other lands which not having been ceded to or purchased by us are still reserved to the said Indians, forthwith to remove themselves from such settlements.

He then forbids persons to buy lands from the Indians and that they

shall not trade with the Indians without a license from the governor, and that all officers, civil and military are required to seize and apprehend all persons who standing charged with treason, murder or other felonies or misdemeanors shall fly from justice and take refuge in the said territory and to send them under proper guard to the colony where the crime was committed, &c.

In this proclamation we see manifested a desire that the Indians should not be molested in their possessions, that no grants be made of such lands, that there shall be no authority thereon and all that have settled thereon shall remove therefrom back into the interior, and that all refugees from justice should be captured and returned to their colony for trial. These lands are those on waters which flow to the west, and except those lands on the Potomac, all the lands in West Virginia were prohibited from being settled, or purchased either from the crown or from the Indians.

His royal majesty's pleasure in 1763 does not exactly correspond with his governor's promises in 1754. Then, in order to secure soldiers, they should have lands on the Ohio, to be given to them immediately after the performance of their services, to be held and enjoyed by them free from quit rents, &c.; these soldiers were to fight the French and Indians, and now the French have made peace and the Indians withdrawn, these same soldiers are forbidden to have their patents or to reside on their said lands. Royal policy and Royal promises are perhaps almost as sacredly observed as a treaty made by an Indian. The Greenbrier and Loyal Land Companies, aftr the war was over, petitioned the governor, stating the facts of their having made contracts for lands, made surveys and settlements which were prevented by the war from completing, and prayed a renewal of the warrants and extension of four years more in which to complete the same.

The said governor and council on the 25th of May, 1763, resolved that they were restrained by the royal instruction from granting the prayer of the petitions.

It is claimed that while there had been peace made between France and England, that the Indians were not made known of the facts, and that they having made no treaty of peace or if they did, it meant not

ing to them, and they continued to take pleasure in taking scalps whenever they could be found.

In 1761 it is said they penetrated even unto Purgatory, and raised hell, on the "Jeems". They killed Thomas Perry and Joseph Dennis scalped Mr. Renix and Smith and carried away a large number of women and children.

In 1763, the Indians went to the Big creek and Muddy creek in Greenbrier, pretended to be friendly now that peace had been made and in their only settlements in Greenbrier, consisting of about one hundred souls, all the men were killed and some women and children taken prisoners. Mrs. Clendenin was one of these prisoners.

In 1764, they again penetrated to the James by way of the Big Sandy and New River, killed William Carpenter and captured his son, Mr. Brown and sons. And Mr. Gun was killed with his two children and his wife captured, some of whom were recaptured by the whites.

In Hampshire Mrs. Thomas was captured and escaped. And settlements on the Cheat and Tygarts river were attacked.

After the Indians failed in their attempt to prevent Col. Boquets relieving Fort Pitt and bringing provisions and men there, they having attacked him on Turtle Creek and were completely defeated, then they were disposed to make a treaty of peace, at least to last until they could receive ammunition.

Capt. James Smith saw a number of wagons from Philadelphia going west, and knew they had goods and warlike stores to trade with the Indians and he did not hesitate to attack it, and he captured all the powder lead, tomahawks, scalping knives, blankets, &c., and let the owners return home.

Sir William Johnson made a treaty of peace with the Indians in 1765, although just before this, the Indians had disregarded their contract made with Col. Boquet and had committed depredations.

Following the treaty of 1765 there was a comparative quiet and security along the frontiers and there were found marching to the western front many settlers all along the line. On the Monongahela and Ohio were settlers established as also on the Tygart Valley in 1768 and

1769. Many of these came from the South Branch of the Potomac and remained during the summer, clearing, planting and building and returned to their homes in the winter. Among these may be mentioned the Zanes, Morgans, Deckers, Van Meter, Hughes, Swann, Tegard, Crawford, Harden, Booth, Thomas, Cutrights, Rule, Hacker, Radcliffs, Pringle, Jacksons, Davis, Sleeth, Brown, and others extending from Wheeling creek on the Ohio, up the Monongahela to its headwaters. So also in the Greenbrier country the settlers began to return in 1769. The McClanahans, Renicks, Arbuckles, Williams, McCoy, and they continued to come thereafter.

It appears that His Majesty's proclamation held good as to granting lands on the western waters, for it appears that durnig the administration of His Majesty's governor in Virginia there were no lands sold or granted by said governor, excepting however the lands that were given to the Volunteers under the proclamation of 1754. In 1764 the Governor and Council were asked by petition through Washington to permit the said two hundred thousand acres be surveyed and allotted to the men entitled thereto. Which was done and patents were issued in 1772 and 1773.

Upon examination of Dyer's Index to Patents in West Virginia there will be found no other patents issued for lands on western waters, but for lands in Hampshire there appears many down to 1766, for lands on the Potomac.

We note that in 1774 Governor Dunmore invested in six tracts in Hampshire, amounting to 3465 acres, to which we fear he lost the title by not attending to business subsequently, as the people of Virginia required of him.

The particulars of the survey known as the Savage grant, part of the two hundred thousand given to the soldiers in the French and Indian War, are given in the Oct., 1901, number of this magazine, page 9, and is located on the Ohio river above Big Sandy river. In Washington's trip to the Ohio in 1770, he reached Fort Pitt Oct. 17th, which he describes the houses which are built of logs and arranged in streets, "on the Monongahela, and I suppose may be about twenty in number and inhabited by Indian traders." No mention is made of having seen any settlements on his route to the mouth of the Great Kanawha and return. General Lewis in his march from Greenbrier to the Ohio in fall of 1774, mentions no settlement seen *en route*.

It further appears however, that the Greenbrier and Loyal Land Companies were applied to by many persons for the purchase of sundry parts of their lands, and they sold to many of them with the understanding that if the Company should ever be able to make title to said lands they would do so, otherwise those who settled thereon were to abide the consequences of their settlement, and on these terms great numbers did settle thereon.

In 1773, the Governor and Council made an order that the officers and soldiers under the King's Proclamation of 1763, should be at liberty to locate their lands wherever they should desire so as not to interfere with legal surveys or actual settlements.

After this order, in 1774 and 1775, the said companies made surveys for settlers, who were prevented from obtaining patents by the precipitate haste of the Governor in 1775.

So far there is little or no evidence of any settlements on the Ohio below Wheeling and none on the Kanawha west of Lewisburg, though there may have been surveyors and explorers and hunters throughout the length and breadth of the land, and there may have been persons without titles to land, who were living in cabins erected on lands, hunting good lands to which they expected to secure titles, in the course of human events.

The improvement on the upper Ohio, on the Monongahela and its branches had increased greatly up to 1774 and families had settled as far down as Grave Creek on the Ohio. The Cheat and the Tygart, the West Fork and Elk, on Buckhannon and Hackers creek had accession in 1772.

Withers, writing on the early settlements said: "Man is, at all times, the creature of circumstances. Cut off from an intercourse with his fellow man and divested of the conveniences of life, he will readily relapse into a state of nature; placed in contiguity with the barbarous and the vicious, his manner will become rude and his morals perverted; brought into collision with the sanguinary and revengeful, his conduct will eventually be distinguished by bloody and vindictive deeds."

He further says that the men who just made settlements on the frontiers were men without means sufficient to purchase land for homes in the neighborhood from which they came and who were unwilling

to remain tenants of others, were mostly from the humble walks of life, comparatively illiterate and unrefined but with a love of liberty bordering on the extreme, and it is not to be surprising that their derelictions from property had not been greater, and their virtues less.

Ambition of preferment and pride of place were all lost in the woods, they were all alike in the back woods, and their common dangers compelled them to rely upon each other.

But it was never intended that the white people should live with the red men in peace, and the result was that when the Indian went wandering about the settlements, living and doing as Indians did do, even in times of peace, it is not surprising that there were repeated reports of dead Indian in many localities. Such were the facts. It is also claimed that by this time, the British emissaries urged the Indians on to war, and the situation of affairs between England and her colonies and the violation of the King's proclamation, all tend to the conviction that this was true. Some allege that it was the attempt to seize Kentucky that lead to the coming war; that many of those settlers came from the east by way of Red Stone and Fort Pitt and the Indians thought to destroy all in the west of the Allegheny, would relieve them of any trouble in Kentucky, which we regard as a very fair presumption.

Then came the affairs at Captina and Yellow creek, and now comes the scalp helloo, and the Indian war of 1774 broke loose with all the terror that the savage could give to it.

Walter Kelley remained on the Kanawha too long and was killed. His daughter had returned to Muddy creek in Greenbrier, with her uncle was killed.

On Simpson creek, Robinson, Hillen and Brown were killed and captured. On the Monongahela, Pricket was killed and his wife captured. On the Ohio the Wetzel boys were captured, and it went on. where ever the two races met, there was the tug of war.

Then came the battle of Point Pleasant.

We shall not write of this but will refer you to the following articles in this magazine: "The Dunmore War," January, 1903. "The Battle of Point Pleasant, Oct. 10, 1774," January, 1902. "National Character of Battle of Point Pleasant," April, 1902. "Kentuckians at Point Pleasant Battle." October, 1902.

Withers thought that Dunmore was as much surprised at the result of this battle as were the Indians, and the great disappointment lead his Lordship and the Indian Chiefs to patch up a peace, for the time being.

Now there was comparative rest for awhile, and while the settlers had rest, the colonies and the king had come to an open rupture.

The British agents were busy from Canada to the Gulf of Mexico endeavoring by immediate presents and promises of future rewards, the promise of plunder, the expulsion of the white settlers and the repossession by the natives of the land of their fathers, and the opportunity to gratify their vengeances all combined, and nothing offered by the colonies, were too strong to be overcome by a savage, and they chose to aid the British against the Colonist and settler.

In 1776, there were murdered by Indians at the Big Sandy and Muddy creek in Greenbrier. Robt. Hughes captured on the Kanawha, and held a prisoner for two years.

In 1777, Thos. Ryan was killed near Wheeling; Rachel Grill was scalped, and there was an attack on the Fort at Wheeling. The Grigsby family killed on Rooting creek; at Coon's Fort a girl was killed.

In Tygart's Valley, the Connolly and Stewart families killed. Capt. Foreman's company ambuscaded and killed on Ohio, Pedro and White captured on Little Kanawha; the home of Col. Graham attacked in Greenbrier.

Cornstalk, Elinipsico and Red Hawk killed at Point Pleasant.

1778 Coburn's creek, Monongalia, attacked.
On West Fork, John Murphy killed and others captured.
On Cheat River, Mr. Brain killed and Mrs. Morgan captured.
On Hatcher's creek, Washburn killed.
Donnally's Fort attacked, on Greenbrier.
Cottrels house attacked in Harrison.
Lt. John White killed in Randolph.
Lt. Moore and others killed at Pt. Pleasant.
Capt. John Baker killed.

1779 Mr. Brain killed on Snowy creek, Preston county.
On Crooked creek, Stuart family killed and others captured.

D. Morgan attacked by Indians.
Stathers Fort, Dunkard creek attacked.
Fort on Crooked creek attacked.
Scott family murdered.
Hackers creek settlement broken up.
Mrs. Bozarth attacked near Fort Picket, some killed.
John Paulee and family attacked and some captured, in Monroe.
Baker killed at Drennans, Little Levels and others killed near by.

1780 Thomas family killed in Monongalia.
Captives killed near Wheeling.
McClung and Munday killed on Muddy creek, Greenbrier.

1781 Link's Block House attacked and several killed.
Schoolcraft family killed near Beecham's Fort.
Tygart Valley settlement destroyed.

Peace made with England, but the Indians never ceased to kill.

1782 Mr. Fink killed at Beecham's Fort.
Poe brothers encounter with Indians on Upper Ohio.
Wallace killed above Wheeling.
Fort at Wheeling attacked; Elizabeth Zane goes for powder.

1783 Smith and Kerr killed; Mills escaped, in Ohio county.

1784 Moore family attacked, some killed and others captured, on the Clinch.
West Fork ravaged; Flecher's house attacked.

1785 Wetzel captured on the Ohio.
On Bumgarner's creek, Cunningham killed, others captured.
Miss Crow murdered, in Marshall county.

1786 Tacket captured and escaped, on Kanawha.
Ice and Snodgrass killed on Fishing creek.
Wood and Short killed on Buffalo creek.

1787 Becham's murder.
Mr. West killed on Hacker's creek.
Morgan attacked on Buffalo.
Bonnett killed on West Fork.

1788 Eulen escaped from Indians at Point Pleasant.
Rhoda Van Bibber killed.

1789 Men killed at Middle Island creek.
Mrs. Johnson captured on Ten Mile of Monongahela.
On Hacker's creek, Mack family killed.
Mrs. Glass captured.
Tackett's Fort attacked on Kanawha.

1790 Purdy family murdered in Ohio county.
Near Clarksburg Indians took horses.
Mr. Hull killed.
Mrs. Wiley captured in Tazewell, Va.

1791 Mrs. Buskirk killed and John Decker, upper Ohio.
See and Sinclair killed.
Big Bottom murder.
Mr. Bush killed on Freeman's creek.
Middle Island creek settlers attacked.
Humsuckers family killed on Dunkard's creek.

1792 Neale and Triplett killed on Little Kanawha.
Miss Tyler captured.
Wagner boy killed on Hacker's creek.
Jolly family murdered.

1793 Cox captured in Wood county.
Coleman killed and Ryan wounded on Ohio river.
Carpenter killed on Elk river.

1794 Shadrack Harriman killed, the last white man killed by Indians on Kanawha river..
Tush family murdered.
Cozad captured on Hacker's creek.
Caanan killed on West Fork.

1793 Bozarth attacked, some killed, others captured.

In the foregoing we have attempted to give the year and place and the names of those who suffered from the Indians, within the bounds of West Virginia, west of the Alleghenies; a sort of table of contents to some full history to be written hereafter by some one. We should be glad to publish contributions giving the histories of the families of those who thus suffered and the particulars of each case given.

Some idea is given of what our forefathers had to undergo, and the imagination will do the rest, and perhaps not over draw it.

No doubt there are many instances not herein recorded, some we have overlooked and many more we never heard of.

Settlers Before the Revolution.

When the war with England began, there was not a Court House west of the Alleghenies, no organization of the government by which the militia could not be called upon, and in fact, there was no militia to call on, excepting those soldiers on the upper Ohio and Monongahela. There was a fort at the mouth of the Great Kanawha, and one near where Lewisburg now is. One at Clarksburg, Wheeling, Pittsburg, Brownsville and other places on the river above. These points were mere spots in the vast wilderness of woods, and much of the country had never felt the press of the white man's foot, and only a small part was under his control. It has been said that there was a Justice of the Peace of Virginia who held his court at Fort Pitt, as an officer of the District of West Virginia, but his record, nor his commission has ever been found. When it became known that his Majesty proposed to compel the colonies to submit to his dictation by the force of arms and that the British Red-coats were being landed in New England, the citizens of West Augusta met at Fort Pitt and selected an executive committee, whose duty was to secure arms for volunteers, and they also elected representatives to the Continental Congress.

We should have supposed that each man was already armed, and that there were scarcely a sufficient number in the District to have entitled them two delegates in the said Congress, or that they were sufficiently informed or interested in the actions of King George towardr "his loving subjects," or that they would have desired to stir up a war with

any one, but it seems that they had "fight in them and we read that not a battle-field during the Revolution but had some of the West Augusta men engaged therein.

Settlers After the Revolution.

We are now speaking of those who came west of the Alleghenies. This land might have been called a howling wilderness, when it was first visited by the pioneers. The entire country was covered with forests, trees as close together as they could grow, and as large as it was their nature to become, a perfect wilderness of woods. These lands, covered with such forests, teemed with herds of buffalo, with deer, and elk, and bear, wolves, panthers, wild cats, foxes, coons and opossums, all of which roamed at will. There were also turkeys, grouse, quail, and pigeons, in profusion, and the streams were alive with all kinds of fish, and ducks and geese lived therein. There were also wild fruits, grapes and nuts and berries to be found throughout the entire land.

A hunter with his gun, and with knowledge of the trees, could live well and have an abundance of the kind, to be found there.

But, what was it that took the people into this wilderness? We read that some came from Europe to find gold, some to recuperate their broken down fortunes, some as speculators, some for homes to build up under different circumstances and surroundings; some came to worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences and to compel all others to do as they did; some to enjoy civil and religious liberty; some to escape the hard times and taxation of a country ruined by wars, and the tyranny of kings, and some came as the choice between coming here and going to jail.

But why did the people go into this wilderness of West Virginia?

Perhaps when we learn who it was that went, we may ascertain why they went.

There were many that came solely to hunt, to kill game and have a good old time all alone, where there were no laws but those of nature; where they could find plenty of bear and deer and such like wild animals, and they had their cabins and to it they brought the skins of these animals.

Those however that came to settle, to secure lands of their own, to make homes and farms, who were they and why did they seek this wilderness?

Let us ask another question in answer to the above. Where in the wide world could they go and secure for themselves a better country? The climate was temperate, the soil was good, there were streams of pure water everywhere. What more could nature do?

The people that sought homes here, desired to obtain lands and here they were cheap and good. They desired homes that had not the customs of the old countries, they wanted more liberty and freedom of thought and action, and not be hampered with regulations of society brought from the land of tyranny and oppression. It was to throw off all former rules and to act free of caste and to grow up together, under no restriction, civil or religious.

They knew they could secure more land for less money here than elsewhere, that they could within a short time have good farms, with good homes, and their lands soon grow into valuable estates. Nowhere else on earth could they go and do better.

They knew they would have to encounter danger, suffer hardships, and deprivations for years, but they had faith in themselves and in the destiny of the country.

It was necessary to follow the streams that came from the west. There were no roads but they could travel up the streams along the banks and shores. There was the Potomas river, which found its way far from the west, even from the Allegheny mountains.

Then there was the James river, farther to the south, which also came from the Alleghenies.

These, by necessity, became the highways of travel westward. From the Potomac they reached the Ohio by way of the Monongahela, and from the James, they reached the Ohio, by way of New river and the Great Kanawha.

In consequence of the attempt both by the French and the English to hold the junction of the rivers that made the Ohio river, this point became one of importance at an early date, and in one of those attempts to reach there with an army, roads were made, which ever afterwards aided the emigrant on his westward march. The march of the army westward, by way of the Kanawha was made nineteen years later when General Lewis went to Point Pleasant in 1774.

It is a notable fact, that the head waters of the Potomac, and the James, the Monongahela and the Kanawha, all start from a point within the Alleghenies, near where Randolph, Pocahontas and Pendleton

counties unite, but which fact was not known for years after the time the early settlements were made.

The settlements reached the Ohio by way of the Monongahela at an earlier date than they did by the Kanawha.

Those that went to Kentucky went by the Monongahela where they obtained boats, and made their way with more ease and less danger, and in 1770, the place now called Pittsburg began to assume shape of a village.

Frontier Life.

One of the first settlers of the trans-Allegheny country was Adam O'Brien, if his roving disposition and movements would entitle him to the the name of settler. He had a cabin on Elk river at the mouth of Holly river; a long time he owned two tracts of land, held by patents, in Randolph county; he lived on the Little Kanawha and he lived and died on the Big Sandy of Elk in Kanawha county. He seems to have been engaged in making settlements on good lands for others and that he made many. He said that all he had to do was to cut his initials "A. O. B." on some trees, cut down a few saplings and plant a hand full of corn and he secured a right to four hundred acres of land, though it afterwards cost a good deal of hard swearing.

When asked how he came to seek the wilderness and encounter the perils and sufferings of frontier life, he answered that he liked it and did not mind it a bit and in further explanation said, that he was a poor man and had got behind hand and when that's the case, there is no staying in the settlements for those varments, the sheriffs and constables, who were worse than Indians, because you could kill Indians, and you dare not kill the sheriffs. That after the king's proclamation for all settlers and surveyors to remove east of the big ridge, from off the western waters, there was no people on the west side except those who had run away from justice and here they were as free as the biggest buck agoing, and after the peace of sixty-three, it was all quiet in the back woods. That there was a settlement at Dunkard's bottom and a small one where Clarksburg now is, and some squatters here and there, that had their cabins, their corn and potatoes and their guns with which they kept themselves in bear meat and venison, and while they

had no money, they had skins with which they could secure powder and lead and such things that they had to buy. He said that they lived quite happy before the Revolution, for then there was no law, no courts and no sheriffs and they all agreed pretty well, but after awhile the people began to come and make settlements and then there was need for law; and then came the lawyers and next the preachers and from that time they never had any peace any more, that the lawyers persuaded them to sue when they were not paid, and the preachers *converted* one half and they began to quarrel with the other half because they would not take care of their own souls, and from that time, they never had any peace for body or soul, and that the sheriffs were worse than the wild cats and painters and would take the last coverlit from your wife's straw bed or turn you out in a storm, and I tell you, mister, I would rather take my chances and live among savages than live among justices and lawyers and sheriffs, who with all their civility, have no natural feeling in them. The settlers had to go to the field with their gun and oft times their wives had to keep watch with rifle while they were at the plough.

No doubt there were men who preferred to live by hunting in the wilderness, where they were not troubled by sheriffs, and Mr. O'Brien admits that he was one of them, and Walter Kelly, who settled on the Kanawha was another. Kelly sent his family back to Greenbrier in time of danger but he did not wish to come in contact with civilization and law; he had left South Carolina for some cause and had taken to the woods as had Adam O'Brien, and he remained until he was killed by the Indians. O'Brien lived to be over one hundred years of age and died in 1836.

We can readily imagine tht the country filled up with all sorts and conditions of people, and we can imagine the inconvenience, the hardships and sufferings through which they had to pass.

Into the wilderness there were no roads, hence the emigrant could take no wagon, and he had to resort to the pack-horse. He must have his good rifle and ammunition, his axe and other tools, he needed his cooking utensils, and his bed.

Some one in describing his frontier home said, the houses were of logs, no nails to put on the roof with, we made our furniture in the woods, we raised our flax and wool and made our own hunting shirts

and short frocks, our shoes were moccasins; we had a bio and a pail, kettle, an oven, a frying pan and a pot; we had no table ware that would break and but little of that; sharp sticks of wood were used for forks and the butcher knife answered for all.

We raised corn and hogs, for these were the surest and most rapid producers of bread and meat.

There were no mills, no stores, no doctors; thrown upon our own resources, we learned to do without many things and to make others, and to carefully take care of such as we had to have and which was difficult to secure, some of which were powder and lead and medicines.

In after years, the pack-horse was loaded for market and started back for the settlements, and brought home such things as were needed most. Peddlers soon learned the way to the way to the frontier, and enterprising merchants followed.

The settlers grew in numbers, the farm grew in size, and the houses in number, and home comforts increased, and in a few years, they were no more settlers but farmers, no more pioneers, but old residents, and the eastern home and people forgotten.

"I'm going west," he said with a sigh,
"I'm bound to win, or else to die."

Then see him start and travel west,
To live it out, he'll do his best.

In silent woods, his cabin rude,
He hides away where none intrude.

But for the smoke above the trees
No mark of living thing one sees.

His house from storm must be his port,
From all assaults must be his fort.

His gun secure, hangs on the wall,
With powder horn and leaden ball.

His knife he wears, with burnished blade,
In close attack, his surest aid.

His axe and tools, he guards with care.
None to replace, few to repair.

Alike the beast, always alert,
Danger to see and it avert.

Danger at night, peril by day,
His life at risk, move as he may.

W. S. LAIDLEY.

KANAWHA COUNTY RECORDS.

We have determined to publish the names of the owners of the lands in Kanawha county in the year 1791, and we selected this year for the reason that the names were more plainly and better written. We do not give the figures which would tell of the number of acres they owned, or of the tax with which they were charged, but the names, only 74 of them, and but few of them residing in the county.

We then will publish the names of the residents of the county whose names are listed for taxation and called "tithables," and which also shows the number of horses and slaves owned by each. Of these there are 118 names on the book for 1792.

The taxes charged on these books are made in English money, the pound, shilling and pence. The year 1799 being the first in which the dollar and cent was used.

We would call attention to the difference of the names on these books. One would suppose that they would be very similar, but they are as different as if they were for separate counties. Of course many of the residents had not then acquired their title to these lands, which were afterwards charged to them, and the books were as not as accurate as they might have been made.

Kanawha extended from Gauley to Harrison county, from near Parkersburg to Big Sandy and up to the Cumberland Mountain and back to Gauley.

1792—*Tithables.*

William Allen,
Davis Alderson,
Chas. Alsbury,
Thos. Alsbury,
Enos Atwater,
Wm. Arbuckle,
Daniel Boone,
Jesse Boone,
Michael Baker,
David Brown,
Abraham Baker,
John Bailey,
John Beckley,
Geo. Clendenin,
Wm. Clendenin,
Alex. Clendenin,
Joseph Carroll,
Wm. Carroll,
John Childress,
Leonard Cooper,
Wm. Craige,
James Craige,
Jacob Coonci,
John Carter,
John Cavender,
John Campbell,
Joseph Lynne,
Jacob Casdorph,
Fleming Cobbs,
Thomas Craige,
Andrew Donnally,
Ezekiel Woody,
Wm. Drody,
Joseph Don,
James Ervin,
David Ervin,
John Edwards,
Joseph Edwards,
James Ferguson,
John Fleming,
Andrew Fleming,
Geo. Fitzwater,
Luman Gibbs,
Edward Hughes,
Thomas Harman,
Wm. Hall,
Joel Houston,
Samuel Houston,
Thomas Hughes,
Nat. Huddleston,
John Huddleston,
Daniel Huddleston,
Shadrack Harriman,
John Hansford,
John Hart,
John Jones,
John Jenkins,
Robt. Iron,
Thos. Lewis,
And. Lewis,
Robt. Lewis,
John Moss,
Amos Morris,
Chas. McClung,
Wm. Morris,
John Morris,

Levi Morris,
Henry Morris,
Ed. McClung,
And. McClung,
Wm. Morris, Jr.,
David Milburn,
Benj. Morris,
Leonard Morris,
Wm. McClung
Daniel Northup,
Michael Newhouse,
Henry Newhouse,
Wm. Owen,
Abner Pryor,
Edward Price,
Allen Pryor,
Wm. Pryor,
John Reynolds,
Maurice Reynolds,
Isaac Robinson,
Allen Rue,
Michael See,
Reuben Slaughter
Wm. Smith,
James Shirkey,
John Shepherd,
Thos. Smith,
Robt. St. Clair,
Geo. Thornton,
Isaac Taylor,
Francis Tacket,
Levi Tacket,
Thomas Upton,
Benj. Uland,
Jesse Van Bibber,
Peter Van Bibber,
James Van Bibber,
Isaac Van Bibber,
Mathias Van Bibber,
John Van Bibber,
James Van Vibber,
Joseph Wood,
Nemen Watkins,
Roland Wheeler,
John Wheeler,
Roland Wheeler, Jr.,
Wm. Wheeler,
Samuel White,
Jonathan Windsor,
John Young,
Conrad Young,
Mathias Young,

1791—*Land Books.*

William Arbuckle,
Henry Banks,
Thos. Bulletts Harris,
Jos. Mayor Carrington,
Leonard Cooper,
Jas. Carnahan,
Thos. Chenoweth,
John Chenoweth,
Michael Carnes,
John Callaway,
James Crack,
Robt. Davis,
Thomas Davis,
Wm. Duvall,
Wm. Donavan,
Zechariah Dercer,
Jas. Donnally,
Marcus Elkin,
Thomas Edar,
Baird Edmondson

Wm. Trigg,
Geo. Welch,
John Finley,
Michael Gratz,
Chas. Willing,
Josiah Willard Gibbs,
Gabriel Green,
David Gourd,
Morris Given,
Wm. Griffith,
Isaiah Hews,
Levi Hollingsworth,
Easom Hanen,
Shedrack Harriman,
Mordicai Hord,
Wm. Henderson & als.,
Hogg & Bullett,
Moses Hunter,
James Hines,
Wm. Hepburn,
John Dundass,
John Jones,
Benj. Lodge,
Thos. Levacy,
Jacob Lochard's heirs,
Isaac Moses,
Robt. Mercer,
Jas. Mercer,
Nat. McGill,
Geo. Muse,
Levi Osborn,
J. F. Preston,
Wm. Pryor,
Benj. Pollard,
Ed. Price,
Jas. Penberry,
Sam'l Pleasants,
Geo. Snuffer,
Thos. Upton,
Jas. Vaughan,
Matthew Vaughan,
Jas. Wilson,
Benj. Wyncoop,
John Wilson,
John Ward,
Solomon Wilson,
Geo. Washington,
George Washington and Andrew Lewis,
Sam'l Ward,
Foster Webb,
Jonathan Windsor,
Sinah West,
John Young.

DECEASED MEMBERS OF W. VA. HISTORICAL AND ANTIQUARIAN SOCIETY.

Brown, Judge J. H.
Byrne, Benjamin W.

Cole, John L.

Gardner, A. D.
Gallaher, Chas. M.

Hedrick, Charles.

Hale, Dr. John P.
Houston, Thos. D.

Laidley, Alex'r T.

Powell, Evan.

Warth, John A.
Wilson, Hon. Wm. L.

Vosburg, Dr. A. G.

MORAVIAN MISSIONARIES IN VIRGINIA IN 1749

In the Virginia Magazine of October, 1903, Charles E. Kemper, of Washington, D. C., gives the translation made by Rev. W. J. Hinke, of the diaries found in the archives of the Moravian Church, in Bethlehem, Pa. Rev. Leonard Schnell and Rev. John Brandmiller, German ministers of the Moravian church, set out on Oct. 12, 1749, to visit the German people, to preach in their houses and baptize their children, and to make report of their work, &c. They returned Dec. 12, 1749, and wrote out their report and filed the same with said church officials, where they have rested until lately they have been translated.

They went to Frederick, Md., and on Oct. 30, they reached the Potomac after having stopped at Jonathan Haegers, the founder of Hagerstown. They proceeded up the Potomac, passing Evett's and Wills creek, near Cumberland where they found Colonel Cresap; from thence they went to the South Branch of the Potomac, to Peter Petersons. Henry Van Meters and John Beckers and came to Mathias Joachims, where they preached and baptized. They continued up the South Branch to its head and over on to the *"Kauh Pastert"* which means the Cow Pasture river.

They complained of the scarcity of houses, and where there were houses, there was no bread. They speak of having "Welsh corn", by which, it is supposed, they meant hominy.

They went on to the James River, which on the 16th Nov. they had to swim and this they called "hard work", besides they say they found there *a kind of white people*, who live like savages, eating Welsh-corn, sleeping on bear skins around the fire, which the missionaries regarded "a poor manner of living." They proceeded further South, across Ca-

tawba creek, and went to Justice Robeson's mill, where they expected to get some bread, but even there they found no bread.

On the 19th of Nov. they reached a German settlement on New River, where they preached. There is raised a question, from whence came those Germans? It is impossible to think they came from Pennsylvania, passed through the Shenandoah Valley and went and settled here on New River. It was also stated that they must have come up from North Carolina, but, they made a mistake, for the Indians in 1755 and1756 exterminated the entire settlement.

The missionaries proceeded no further south; being unable to learn of any Germans in that section, they turned homeward, being about three hundred miles from Bethlehem.

On Dec. 1, they say they passed confidently and safely through the Irish settlement on the James, and they speak of this event as one to be thankful for. The Note to this statement says that this was a Scotch-Irish settlement in Augusta, and we would suppose that it was the same which the missionaries spoke of, as a kind of white people living like savages. (We call on the Rev. Mr. Price for an explanation of all this.)

They next went on to Adam Miller's, on the South Shenandoah and there preached. This is where Elkton now is. How they reached this point without mentioning Staunton or other places South of it, we do not quite comprehend, perhaps they avoided the wild Irish settlements.

Adam Miller is said to have settled there in 1726.

They proceeded to the Massa Nutton district and on Dec. 7, they walked twenty miles before breakfast, because they found no house and no bread.

They proceeded down the Shenandoah, and they mention seeing Stephen Schmidt, a Catholic: Benjamin Frey, whom they say was friendly in his way, (but did not mention the peculiarity of his way) who lived on Cedar creek. They next preached at old Mr. Funks, (which we suppose was about Strausburg.)

On Dec. 11, they visited "the old Jost Hayd" but did not stay long with him. This was Jost Hite and we are curious to know why they did not stay long with him.

It also appears that one Rev. Mr. Klug had prejudiced the people

against the Moravian's missionaries, and one German who had entertained these missionaries two years before, stated that he would not let them preach in his house for fifty pounds.

They went on to Fredericktown, which is now Winchester, and then on to the Potomac, where the ferry man took them over the river. This ferry is (in the note) called "Watkins Ferry", and we wonder why not Harper's Ferry, or Swearengen, at the town of Mechlenburg, if there was a town there then.

Lutheran missionaries had gone up the valley ten years before this trip was made, and their records of baptisms have been published, but these made their way up the South Branch on to the head of the James, which is said to have been the way the Indians passed from the North to the South, in their search for scalps, &c.

We have only given a sketch of what will be found in full in the said Virginia Magazine.

NOTES, MEMORANDA AND CORRECTIONS, &C.

Gen'l Wm. P. Craighill has presented the Historical Society with a copy of an old map, of some surveys made in the vicinity of Charles Town, and it is claimed the map was made in 1734. It has on it "Evetts Marsh", which we suppose is the same as "Evett's Run." There is some question as to the date when said map was made and we are of the opinion that it was later than 1734, but the surveys were made in that year, or some of them. It is an interesting document, with or without the question. Gen'l Craighill has contributed other ancient documents, viz: A patent for 120 acres of land to Thos. Fruman in 1664, in Md., and another for 400 acres, to Francis Billingsby, in 1663, in Md. A copy of The Maryland Journal of July 4, 1780; a copy of the Baltimore American of Nov. 20, 1863, &c., &c. We tender the thanks of the Society to the General, for his contributions.

Col. W. H. Edwards has published the "*Edwards Genealogy*" and presented the His. Soc. with a copy. Would that others would write

their family histories in books, and thus preserve the same to future generations. This is an interesting study and all it needed is a more extended sketch of the author. Col. Edwards also presented the Society with a copy of a speech made by Hon. John Tyler, Mar. 13, 1861, in the Virginia Convention. Mr. Tyler asked, "Whither are you going?" and stated that it was a choice between the ice-bergs of the north and the cotton fields of the south, and that he preferred the cotton-fields. Thanks are tendered to Col. Edwards for his contributions.

"*Ohio History Sketches*", an interesting book of three hundred and fifty pages with illustrations, maps, &c., received from Hon. E. O. Randall, Secretary of Ohio Historical Society. The work contains sketches of about thirty characters, and nine or ten subjects, viz.: The Mound Builders, The North West Territory, The Ordinance of 1787, Land Grants in Ohio, First Court in Ohio, Defence of Fort Stevenson, Perry's Victory, La Fayette's visit to Ohio, The Underground Railroad, The Process of the Century Review. It has sketches of Cutler, St. Cloir, Symms, Putnam, Wayne, Tiffin, Corwin, Ewing, Thurman, Grant, Wait, Shermans and many others of Ohio's popular citizens.

We were interested in the North West Territory, Land Grants, The Underground Railroad, and in fact, all of the subjects. Of course we were intterested in all those that went from Virginia, Tiffin, the first governor and his wife, Mary Worthington went from Berkeley county. Thos. Worthington, the next governor, Gov. Morrow, Thos. Ewing, and Thurman, and others were given to Ohio by Virginia, and helped make Ohio great.

Thanks for so much information contained in the small volume.

Correction—In the July number, last, of this magazine, on page 243, it is stated that the earliest land book of Kanawha county, that was preserved, was for the year 1797. In this present number, we publish the names of land owners of Kanawha for the year 1791. The last statement has the advantage of being true.

"*Daniel Boone,*" by R. G. Thwaites, presented to the W. Va. His. Soc. by Miss Lou K. Poage, of Ashland, Ky. This work is the most complete of any that has been published. It makes his arrival in Kanawha in 1788, and departure, 1799. It has many things therein

that were new to us, that he was raised a Quaker, that he was a prisoner of Cornwallis, while a member of the Virginia Legislature, that he was court-martialed, &c.

4275 4